Approximation Theorems Related to the Coupon Collector’s Problem

Ph.D. Thesis

by

Anna Pósfai

Supervisors: Prof. Sándor Csörgő and Prof. Andrew D. Barbour

Doctoral School in Mathematics and Computer Science
University of Szeged
Bolyai Institute

2010
## Contents

1 **Introduction** 5  
1.1 The coupon collector’s problem 5  
1.2 Limit theorems in the coupon collector’s problem 6  
1.3 Aims of the thesis 7  

2 **Methods to measure the closeness of probability distributions** 9  
2.1 Probability metrics 9  
2.2 The method of characteristic functions 11  
2.3 Stein’s method 13  
2.4 Couplings 14  

3 **Gumbel-like approximation** 19  
3.1 Preliminaries and results 19  
3.2 Proofs 21  

4 **Normal approximation** 41  

5 **Poisson approximation** 51  
5.1 Poisson approximation in a general Poisson limit theorem 52  
5.2 Coupon collecting with an approximately Poisson distributed waiting time – application of the general results 56  
5.3 Coupon collecting with an approximately Poisson distributed waiting time – combinatorial approach 58  
5.4 Poisson approximation – matching the means 64  

6 **Compound Poisson approximation** 69  
6.1 An extension of Mineka’s coupling inequality 69  
6.2 Compound Poisson approximation in the range of the central and Poisson limit theorems 74  

7 **Poisson–Charlier expansions** 79  

Summary 97
Acknowledgement 105
Bibliography 107
Chapter 1

Introduction

1.1 The coupon collector’s problem

The coupon collector’s problem is one of the classical problems of probability theory. The simplest and probably original version of the problem is the following: Suppose that there are $n$ coupons, from which coupons are being collected with replacement. What is the probability that more than $t$ sample trials are needed to collect all $n$ coupons? One of the first discussions of the problem is due to Pólya [25]. It is brought up 7 times in Feller [13]. The problem has numerous variants and generalizations. It is related to urn problems and the study of waiting times of various random phenomena (e.g. [17], [16], [1]), etc.

We shall be interested in the following version of the problem. A coupon collector samples with replacement a set of $n \geq 2$ distinct coupons so that at each time any one of the $n$ coupons is drawn with the same probability $1/n$. For a fixed integer $m \in \{0, 1, \ldots, n-1\}$, this is repeated until $n-m$ distinct coupons are collected for the first time. Let $W_{n,m}$ denote the number of necessary repetitions to achieve this. Thus the random variable $W_{n,m}$, called the coupon collector’s waiting time, can take on the values $n-m, n-m+1, n-m+2, \ldots$, and gives the number of draws necessary to have a collection, for the first time, with only $m$ coupons missing. In particular, $W_{n,0}$ is the waiting time to acquire, for the first time, a complete collection.

The starting point in the study of the behavior of the distribution of the coupon collector’s waiting time is the well-known equality in distribution ([13], p. 225)

$$W_{n,m} \overset{D}{=} X_{n/n} + X_{(n-1)/n} + \cdots + X_{(m+1)/n},$$

where $X_{n/n}, X_{(n-1)/n}, \ldots, X_{(m+1)/n}$ are independent random variables with geometric distributions pertaining to the success probabilities $n/n, (n-1)/n, \ldots, (m+1)/n$, respectively, so that $P\{X_{k/n} = j\} = \left(1 - \frac{k}{n}\right)^{j-1} \frac{k}{n}$, $j \in \mathbb{N} := \{1, 2, \ldots\}$, for every $k \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\}$.

Since the mean and variance of a geometric random variable with parameter $p$ are $1/p$ and $(1-p)/p^2$ respectively, the mean and variance of the waiting time are

$$\mu_n = \mu_n(m) := E(W_{n,m}) = n \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{k},$$

(1.2)
\[ \sigma_n^2 = \sigma_n^2(m) := \text{Var}(W_{n,m}) = n \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{n-k}{k^2} = n \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{n-k}{k^2}. \] (1.3)

### 1.2 Limit theorems in the coupon collector’s problem

Different limit theorems have been proved for the asymptotic distribution of \( W_{n,m} \), depending on how \( m \) behaves as \( n \to \infty \). From now on all asymptotic relations throughout are meant as \( n \to \infty \) unless otherwise specified.

The first result was proved by Erdős and Rényi [12] for complete collections when \( m = 0 \) for all \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), obtaining a limiting Gumbel extreme value distribution:

\[ \frac{W_{n,0} - \mu_n}{n} \overset{D}{\to} \text{Gumbel}(0), \]

where the probability measure Gumbel(0) is defined to be the Gumbel distribution shifted by Euler’s constant:

\[ \text{Gumbel}(0)\{(-\infty, x]\} = e^{-e^{-(x+\gamma)}}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, \]

where \( \gamma = \lim_{n \to \infty} \left( \sum_{k=1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} - \log n \right) = 0.577215 \ldots \)

This result was extended by Baum and Billingsley [8], who examined all relevant sequences of \( m \). They determined four different limiting distributions:

1. **Degenerate distribution at 0**

   If \( \frac{n-m}{\sqrt{n}} \to 0 \), then \( W_{n,m} - (n-m) \overset{D}{\to} 0 \),

   that is the limiting probability measure is concentrated on 0.

2. **Poisson distribution**

   If \( \frac{n-m}{\sqrt{n}} \to \sqrt{2\lambda} \), then \( W_{n,m} - (n-m) \overset{D}{\to} \text{Po}(\lambda) \),

   where \( \text{Po}(\lambda) \) is the Poisson distribution with parameter \( \lambda \) defined by \( \text{Po}(\lambda)\{k\} = \frac{\lambda^k}{k!}e^{-\lambda}, \quad k = 0, 1, 2, \ldots \).

3. **Normal distribution**

   If \( \frac{n-m}{\sqrt{n}} \to \infty \) and \( m \to \infty \), then \( \frac{W_{n,m} - \mu_n}{\sigma_n} \overset{D}{\to} \text{N}(0, 1) \),

   where \( \text{N}(0,1) \) denotes the standard normal distribution, whose probability density function with respect to the Lebesgue measure is \( \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}}e^{-x^2/2}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R} \).

4. **Gumbel-like distribution**

   If \( m \equiv m \), then \( \frac{W_{n,m} - \mu_n}{n} \overset{D}{\to} \text{Gumbel}(m) \),
where we call Gumbel\((m)\) the Gumbel-like distribution with parameter \(m\), and define it to be the probability measure with probability density function with respect to the Lebesgue measure
\[
\frac{1}{m!} e^{-(m+1)\left(x+\gamma-\sum_{k=1}^{m} \frac{1}{k}\right)} e^{-e^{-\left(x+\gamma-\sum_{k=1}^{m} \frac{1}{k}\right)}}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}.
\]

1.3 Aims of the thesis

One of the aims of this thesis is to refine the limit theorems of the previous section. Our basic goal is to approximate the distribution of the coupon collector’s appropriately centered and normalized waiting time with well-known measures with high accuracy, and in many cases prove asymptotic expansions for the related probability distribution functions and mass functions. The approximating measures shall be chosen from five different measure families. Three of them – the Poisson distributions, the normal distributions and the Gumbel-like distributions – shall be probability measure families whose members occur as limiting laws in the limit theorems of Baum and Billingsley.

The fourth set of measures considered shall be a certain \(\{\pi_{\mu,a} : \mu > 0, a > 0\}\) family of compound Poisson measures which we now define. For each \(\mu > 0\) and \(a > 0\) let \(\pi_{\mu,a}\) denote the probability distribution of \(Z_1 + 2Z_2\), where \(Z_1\) and \(Z_2\) are independent random variables defined on a common probability space, \(Z_1 \sim \text{Po}(\mu)\) and \(Z_2 \sim \text{Po}(a/2)\). Since \(\text{Po}(\lambda), \lambda > 0\), has probability generating function \(\exp\{\lambda(z - 1)\}\), the probability generating function of \(Z_1 + 2Z_2\) is
\[
g(z) := E\left(z^{Z_1+2Z_2}\right) = E\left(z^{Z_1}\right) E\left((z^2)^{Z_2}\right) = e^{\mu(z-1)} e^{a/2(z^2-1)}
\]
\[
= \exp\left\{\left(\mu + \frac{a}{2}\right) \left(\frac{a}{\mu + \frac{a}{2}} z^2 + \frac{\mu}{\mu + \frac{a}{2}} z - 1\right)\right\}.
\]

By the basic properties of probability generating functions, we see that \(Z_1 + 2Z_2\) does have a compound Poisson distribution, that is, it equals in distribution a random variable of the form \(\sum_{k=1}^{N} X_k\), where \(N, X_1, X_2, \ldots\) are independent random variables given on a common probability space such that \(N \sim \text{Po}(\mu + \frac{a}{2})\) and each \(X_k, k = 1, 2, \ldots\), takes on the values 1 and 2 in the proportion \(\mu : \frac{a}{2}\).

The fifth set of approximating measures we consider shall be the family of Poisson–Charlier signed measures. For any positive real numbers \(\lambda, \tilde{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}^{(S)}\) and \(S \in \mathbb{N}\), the Poisson–Charlier signed measure \(\nu = \nu(\lambda, \tilde{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}^{(S)})\) is a signed measure concentrated on the nonnegative integers defined by
\[
\nu\{j\} = \text{Po}\{j\}(\lambda) \left(\sum_{r=1}^{S} (-1)^r \tilde{a}^{(r)} C_r(j, \lambda)\right), \quad j \in \mathbb{N}, \tag{1.4}
\]
where
\[
C_r(j, \lambda) := \sum_{k=0}^{r} \binom{r}{k} \binom{j}{k} k!\lambda^{-2k} \tag{1.5}
\]
is the \(r\)-th Charlier polynomial ([9] p. 170).
The results of Chapter 3 were published in [30], those of Chapter 4 were published in [29]. The results of the first three sections of Chapter 5 can be found in [28], some details are contained in [27]. The results of Chapter 6 were published in [26].

In the next chapter we explain the basic underlying ideas of the methods used in the proofs of the thesis, and list some of the important results we shall use. Then, each of the following five chapters is dedicated to the approximation of the coupon collector’s waiting time with members of one of the five chosen measure families.
Chapter 2

Methods to measure the closeness of probability distributions

2.1 Probability metrics

There are several ways of defining the distance of two probability distributions. (See e.g. [14] and [31].) Throughout this section let \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) be two probability measures on the measurable space \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\), where \( \mathcal{B} \) denotes the \( \sigma \)-algebra of the Borel sets of the real line. Let \( X \) be a real random variable with distribution \( \mu \) and distribution function \( F \), and let \( Y \) be a real random variable with distribution \( \nu \) and distribution function \( G \). For an arbitrary family \( \mathcal{H} \) of bounded real measurable functions on the real line we define

\[
d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \nu) = \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} \left| \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} h \, d\mu - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} h \, d\nu \right| = \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} |\mathbb{E}(h(X)) - \mathbb{E}(h(Y))|,
\]

which we call the probability metric associated with the family of test functions \( \mathcal{H} \), if \( \mathcal{H} \) is coarse enough to assure \( d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \nu) = 0 \Rightarrow \mu = \nu \).

In this thesis we shall be interested in the probability metrics resulting from \( \mathcal{H} = \{\text{indicator functions of } (-\infty, x], x \in \mathbb{R}\} \) and \( \mathcal{H} = \{\text{indicator functions of all Borel sets}\} \), which are known as Kolmogorov distance and total variation distance respectively.

Kolmogorov distance

The Kolmogorov distance between \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) is defined to be

\[
d_K(\mu, \nu) = \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |\mu((-\infty, x]) - \nu((-\infty, x])|.
\]

Clearly, this is exactly the supremum distance of the corresponding distribution functions: \( d_K(\mu, \nu) = \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F(x) - G(x)| \).

Obviously, \( 0 \leq d_K(\mu, \nu) \leq 1 \), \( d_K(\mu, \nu) = 0 \) iff \( \mu = \nu \), and \( d_K(\mu, \nu) = 1 \) iff \( \sup\{x \in \mathbb{R} : F(x) < 1\} \leq \inf\{x \in \mathbb{R} : G(x) > 0\} \) or \( \sup\{x \in \mathbb{R} : G(x) < 1\} \leq \inf\{x \in \mathbb{R} : F(x) > 0\} \). Since \( d_K(\cdot, \cdot) \) as a function of two variables is also symmetric and satisfies the triangle inequality, \( d_K(\cdot, \cdot) \) is indeed a metric on the space of probability distributions on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\).
Convergence in Kolmogorov metric is stronger than convergence in distribution, that is if \( \mu_n, n \in \mathbb{N}, \) is a sequence of probability measures on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\) with corresponding distribution functions \( F_n, n \in \mathbb{N}, \) such that \( d_K(\mu_n, \mu) \to 0, \) then \( \mu_n \) converges weakly to \( \mu, \) meaning that \( F_n(x) \to F(x) \) for each \( x \in \mathbb{R} \) continuity point of \( F. \) The converse is not true in general. (See [14] p. 14 Theorem 6) One possible metric that metrizes weak convergence of probability measures on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\) is the Levy metric defined by

\[
d_L(\mu, \nu) = \inf \{ \varepsilon > 0 : F(x - \varepsilon) - \varepsilon \leq G(x) \leq F(x + \varepsilon) + \varepsilon, \forall x \in \mathbb{R} \}.
\]

We have

\[
d_L(\mu, \nu) \leq d_K(\mu, \nu) \leq \left(1 + \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F'(x)|\right) d_L(\mu, \nu),
\]

where the first inequality is true for any choices of \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) (see [18] p. 34), while the second one holds true only if \( \mu \) is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure (see [23] p. 43). This implies that the weak convergence \( \mu_n \Rightarrow \mu \) is equivalent to \( d_K(\mu_n, \mu) \to 0 \) in the case when the limiting probability distribution \( \mu \) is absolutely continuous and has a bounded density function.

**Total variation distance**

The total variation distance between \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) is defined to be

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) = \sup_{B \in \mathcal{B}} |\mu(B) - \nu(B)|. \tag{2.3}
\]

The definition above may be given in other equivalent forms. By [5] p. 253, if \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) are both absolutely continuous with respect to a \( \sigma \)-finite measure \( \lambda \) (for example \( \lambda = \mu + \nu \)), and \( f \) and \( g \) are the densities of \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) with respect to \( \lambda \), then

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) = |\mu(B_0) - \nu(B_0)|,
\]

where \( B_0 = \{ x \in \mathbb{R} : f(x) > g(x) \} \)

\[
= \frac{1}{2} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |f - g| \, d\lambda
\]

\[
= 1 - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \min\{f, g\} \, d\lambda.
\]

Later we shall be interested in the case when \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) are the distributions of certain integer valued random variables \( X \) and \( Y \) defined on a common probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, \mathbf{P})\). If we choose \( \lambda \) to be the \( \sigma \)-finite measure that puts unit mass on each of the integers, the formulas above yield

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) = |\mathbf{P}(X \in B_0) - \mathbf{P}(Y \in B_0)|,
\]

where \( B_0 = \{ k \in \mathbb{Z} : \mathbf{P}(X = k) > \mathbf{P}(Y = k) \} \)

\[
= \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mathbf{P}(X = k) - \mathbf{P}(Y = k)|
\]

\[
= 1 - \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} \min\{\mathbf{P}(X = k), \mathbf{P}(Y = k)\}.
\]

As in the case of the Kolmogorov metric, it is easy to see that \( 0 \leq d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) \leq 1, \)

\( d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) = 0 \) iff \( \mu = \nu, \) and \( d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) = 1 \) iff \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) are mutually singular. Since \( d_{TV}(\cdot, \cdot) \)
as a function of two variables is obviously symmetric and satisfies the triangle inequality, 
\( d_{TV}(\cdot, \cdot) \) is indeed another metric on the space of probability distributions on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\).

We note that \( d_K(\mu, \nu) \leq d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) \). It follows by our remarks concerning convergence in Kolmogorov distance that convergence in total variation distance is stronger than convergence in distribution, that is if \( \mu_n, n \in \mathbb{N} \), is a sequence of probability measures on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\) such that \( d_{TV}(\mu_n, \mu) \to 0 \), then \( \mu_n \) converges weakly to \( \mu \). It is easy to give an example showing that the converse of this statement is not true in general. We may take any sequence of discrete real valued random variables for which the central limit theorem holds true. In this case although the induced probability measures converge weakly to the standard normal distribution, the corresponding total variation distances all equal 1, simply because an absolutely continuous and a discrete probability measure are always mutually singular. However, if the probability distributions \( \mu_n, n \in \mathbb{N} \), and \( \mu \) are concentrated on a countable subset of \( \mathbb{R} \), then \( \mu_n \Rightarrow \mu \) implies \( d_{TV}(\mu_n, \mu) \to 0 \) (see [14] p. 14 Theorem 6).

### 2.2 The method of characteristic functions

Let \( X \) be a real random variable defined on a probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P)\) with distribution \( \mu = P \circ X^{-1} \) and distribution function \( F(x) = \mu((-\infty, x]), x \in \mathbb{R} \). The characteristic function of \( X \) is the complex valued function

\[
\varphi_X(t) := \mathbb{E}(e^{itX}) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} \mathbb{P}(dx) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \cos(tx) \mu(dx) + i \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \sin(tx) \mu(dx),
\]

well-defined for all \( t \in \mathbb{R} \). The characteristic function of any real random variable completely defines its probability distribution, that is there is a one-to-one correspondence between probability measures on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\) and characteristic functions ([13], Volume II. p. 508).

One of the most important applications of characteristic functions is the study of convergence in distribution. The Continuity Theorem ([13], Volume II. p. 508) states that in order that a sequence \( \{\mu_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) of probability distributions converges weakly to a probability distribution \( \mu \) it is necessary and sufficient that the sequence \( \{\varphi_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) of their characteristic functions converges pointwise to a limit \( \varphi \), and that \( \varphi \) is continuous at the origin. In this case \( \varphi \) is the characteristic function of \( \mu \). It follows that if \( X_n \) is a real random variable with distribution \( \mu_n \), distribution function \( F_n \) and characteristic function \( \varphi_n, n \in \mathbb{N} \), and the same goes for \( X \) with \( \mu, F \) and \( \varphi \), then

\[
X_n \to X \iff \mu_n \Rightarrow \mu \iff F_n(x) \to F(x), x \in C_F \iff \varphi_n(t) \to \varphi(t), t \in \mathbb{R},
\]

where \( C_F \) denotes the set of continuity points of \( F \).

From this it is clear that characteristic functions are an important tool for proving limit theorems. There are also classical results on characteristic functions which provide methods to refine limit theorems. One of these is Esseen’s smoothing inequality ([24] p. 109), which applied on two probability distribution functions, gives an upper bound on their Kolmogorov distance with the help of the difference of the corresponding characteristic functions.

**Esseen’s smoothing inequality.** If \( F \) is a nondecreasing function, \( G \) is a differentiable function of bounded variation and bounded derivative \( g \), \( \lim_{x \to -\infty} F(x) = \lim_{x \to -\infty} G(x) \)
and \( \lim_{x \to -\infty} F(x) = \lim_{x \to \infty} G(x) \), and \( \varphi \) and \( \psi \) are the Fourier-Stieltjes transforms of \( F \) and \( G \) respectively, that is
\[
\varphi(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} \, dF(x) \quad \text{and} \quad \psi(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} \, dG(x), \quad t \in \mathbb{R},
\]
then for any \( T > 0 \) we have
\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F(x) - G(x)| \leq \frac{b}{2\pi} \int_{-T}^{T} \left| \frac{\varphi(t) - \psi(t)}{t} \right| \, dt + c_b \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |g(x)|, \]
where \( b > 1 \) is arbitrary and \( c_b > 0 \) is a constant depending only on \( b \).

An analogous result for comparing discrete distributions with the help of their characteristic functions is given in a recent paper of Barbour, Kowalski and Nikeghbali. We gather the results of Proposition 2.2., Corollary 2.3. and the formulas (3.15)–(3.17) on p. 11 in [6] in the following theorem.

**Theorem 2.2.1 (Barbour, Kowalski and Nikeghbali)** Let \( \mu \) and \( \nu \) be finite signed measures on \( \mathbb{Z} \), with Fourier-Stieltjes transforms \( \phi \) and \( \psi \) respectively, that is
\[
\phi(t) = \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{itk} \mu\{k\} \quad \text{and} \quad \psi(t) = \sum_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} e^{itk} \nu\{k\}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R}.
\]
Suppose that \( \phi = \tilde{\phi} \chi \) and \( \psi = \tilde{\psi} \chi \) for some functions \( \tilde{\phi}, \tilde{\psi}, \chi : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{C} \), and that for some constants \( t_0, \gamma_0, \gamma, \rho, \eta > 0 \) and \( \gamma_r, \theta_r > 0 \), \( r = 1, 2, \ldots, S \), \( S \in \mathbb{N} \),
\[
|\tilde{\phi}(t) - \tilde{\psi}(t)| \leq \sum_{r=1}^{S} \gamma_r |t|^\theta_r + \gamma_0 \quad \text{and} \quad |\chi(t)| \leq \gamma e^{-\rho t^2}, \quad 0 \leq |t| \leq t_0 \quad (2.4)
\]
\[
|\phi(t) - \psi(t)| \leq \eta, \quad t_0 < |t| \leq \pi. \quad (2.5)
\]
Then
\[
\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu\{k\}| \leq \sum_{r=1}^{S} \alpha_{\theta_r} \gamma \gamma_r (\rho \vee 1)^{-\theta_r + 1} + \alpha_1 \gamma_0 + \alpha_2 \eta. \quad (2.6)
\]
furthermore, if \( \mu \) is a probability measure, then also
\[
d_K(\mu, \nu) \leq \inf_{a \leq b} \left( 2|\nu|\{(-\infty, a) \cup (b, \infty)\} + 2\varepsilon_{ab} \right) \quad (2.7)
\]
and
\[
2 \, d_{TV}(\mu, \nu) \leq \inf_{a \leq b} \left( (b - a + 1) \sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu\{k\}| + 6|\nu|\{(-\infty, a) \cup (b, \infty)\} + 4\varepsilon_{ab} \right), \quad (2.8)
\]
where \( \alpha_{\theta_r} \) are positive constants depending on \( \theta_r, r = 1, 2, \ldots, R, \alpha_1 = \frac{t_0}{\pi} \wedge \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\rho}}, \alpha_2 = 1 - \frac{t_0}{\pi} \) and
\[
\varepsilon_{ab} := \sum_{r=1}^{S} \alpha_{\theta_r} \gamma \gamma_r (\rho \vee 1)^{-\theta_r} + (b - a + 1)(\alpha_1 \gamma_0 + \alpha_2 \eta). \quad (2.9)
\]
2.3 Stein’s method

Stein’s method is a way of deriving explicit estimates for the closeness of two probability distributions. It was introduced by Charles Stein for normal approximation in [32] in 1972. We shall now review the basic idea of the method (see [3]). Let \( \mu_0 \) be a fixed probability measure on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\), which we shall approximate with another probability measure \( \mu \) on \((\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B})\). The error of the approximation will be measured in the probability metric \( d_{\mathcal{H}}(\cdot, \cdot) \) defined in (2.1), where \( \mathcal{H} \) is a well-chosen fixed family of test functions. Stein’s method consists of the following three steps:

1. The Stein characterization of \( \mu_0 \)

One needs to find a set of functions \( F_0 \subset F := \{ f : \mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R} \text{ measurable} \} \) and a mapping \( T : F_0 \to F \) called the Stein operator for \( \mu_0 \) such that

\[
\mu = \mu_0 \quad \text{if and only if} \quad \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} T f \, d\mu = 0 \quad \text{for all } f \in F_0,
\]

or equivalently for any real random variable \( X \)

\[
X \sim \mu_0 \quad \text{if and only if} \quad \mathbb{E}(T f(X)) = 0 \quad \text{for all } f \in F_0.
\]

2. Solving the Stein equation

For each test function \( h \in \mathcal{H} \) one needs to find a solution \( f = f_h \in F_0 \) of the

\[
h(x) - \int_{-\infty}^{x} h \, d\mu_0 = T f(x), \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
\]

Stein equation. If such an \( f_h \) exists for each test function \( h \in \mathcal{H} \), then writing the solution in the above Stein equation, integrating both sides of the equation with respect to \( \mu \) and taking the supremum of the absolute values of both sides over all test functions yields

\[
d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \mu_0) = \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} \left| \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} h \, d\mu - \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} h \, d\mu_0 \right| = \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} \left| \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} T f_h \, d\mu \right|,
\]

that is for any random variable \( X \sim \mu \) we obtain

\[
d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \mu_0) = \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} |\mathbb{E}(T f_h(X))|.
\]

3. Bounding \( \sup_{h \in \mathcal{H}} |\mathbb{E}(T f_h(X))| \)

We have obtained a formula in (2.12) that expresses \( d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \mu_0) \) as a supremum of certain expectations. In the formula the distribution \( \mu_0 \) is only present implicitly through the choices of the functions \( T f_h \). To bound \( d_{\mathcal{H}}(\mu, \mu_0) \) we need to give estimates for the expectations \( \mathbb{E}(T f_h(X)) \), which are surprisingly easier to bound than the original defining formula of the distance, if the Stein operator \( T \) was chosen in a clever way. We note that being able to give good approximations to the expectations \( \mathbb{E}(T f_h(X)) \) depends heavily on the properties of the solutions \( f_h \).
We conclude that the key point in the procedure proposed above is to choose a good Stein operator for \( \mu_0 \): not only does \( T \) need to characterize \( \mu_0 \) as given in (2.10), it also has to yield a Stein equation (2.11) that has a solution \( f_h \) for each test function \( h \in H \), moreover these solutions need to have nice properties.

In this thesis we shall apply results proved by Stein’s method to approximate the appropriate function of the coupon collector’s waiting time with a compound Poisson random variable, and we shall apply the method directly to obtain a Poisson approximation error estimate for the same waiting time. For later use, we now collect the basic results on Poisson approximation in total variation distance with Stein’s method.

### Poisson approximation with Stein’s method

Stein’s method was first extended to Poisson approximation by Chen in [10]. The theory was further developed by Barbour, Holst, Janson and others (see [3] and [5]).

The Stein operator for \( \text{Po}(\lambda) \) is

\[
T : \mathcal{F}_0 := \{ f : \mathbb{Z}_+ \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \text{ bounded} \} \rightarrow \mathcal{F} := \{ f : \mathbb{Z}_+ \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \}, \quad (Tf)(k) = \lambda f(k+1) - kf(k).
\]

It can be proved ([3] p. 65) that this operator \( T \) characterizes \( \text{Po}(\lambda) \) in the required way, that is for any probability measure \( \mu \) on \( \mathbb{Z}_+ \)

\[
\mu = \text{Po}(\lambda) \iff \int_{\mathbb{Z}_+} Tfd\mu = 0 \quad \text{for all} \quad f \in \mathcal{F}_0.
\]

It can also be proved ([3] p. 66) that for each \( h_A \) indicator function of \( A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+ \), the Stein equation

\[
\lambda f(k+1) - kf(k) = h(k) - \int_{\mathbb{Z}_+} Tfd\text{Po}(\lambda) \quad (2.13)
\]

has a solution \( f_h = f_A \), and

\[
\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}_+} |f_h(k)| \leq \min \left\{ 1, \sqrt{\frac{2}{e\lambda}} \right\} \quad (2.14)
\]

and

\[
\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}_+} |f_h(k+1) - f_h(k)| \leq \frac{1 - e^{-\lambda}}{\lambda}.
\]

The method yields the formula

\[
d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(X), \text{Po}(\lambda)) = \sup_{A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+} |\mathbb{E}\{\lambda f_A(X) - X f_A(X)\}|. \quad (2.15)
\]

### 2.4 Couplings

Let \( X \) and \( Y \) be random variables defined on the probability spaces \((\Omega_1, \mathcal{A}_1, P_1)\) and \((\Omega_2, \mathcal{A}_2, P_2)\) respectively. A coupling of \( X \) and \( Y \) is a pair of random variables \( X' \) and \( Y' \) that are defined on the same probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P)\), and such that \( X \overset{D}{=} X' \) and \( Y \overset{D}{=} Y' \). Clearly the coupling of \( X \) and \( Y \) only depends on the distribution of these random variables. It will
be useful for us to think of a coupling the following way: given two probability distributions \( \mu_1 \) and \( \mu_2 \) on \( (\mathbb{R}, \mathcal{B}) \), a coupling of these probability measures means the construction of a probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P)\) and a random vector \((X', Y')\) on this probability space whose \( \mu \) distribution on \((\mathbb{R}^2, \mathcal{B}^2)\) has marginals \( \mu_1 \) and \( \mu_2 \).

Couplings are used in a vast variety of proofs (see e.g. [20] and [33]). In each of them the basic underlying idea is to construct a suitable coupling \((X', Y')\) such that \( X' \) and \( Y' \) have the dependence structure most adequate for handling the problem considered. In this thesis we shall use the coupling method to give estimates for the total variation distance of certain distributions. We now present the basic relation between couplings and total variation distance.

**The coupling inequality**

If \((X', Y')\) defined on \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P)\) is a coupling of the random variables \( X \) and \( Y \), then

\[
d_{TV}(X, Y) \leq P(X' \neq Y').
\] (2.16)

Since the proof of the coupling inequality is quite simple and short, we include it here:

\[
d_{TV}(X, Y) = \sup_{B \in \mathcal{B}} |P(X' \in B) - P(Y' \in B)|
\leq \sup_{B \in \mathcal{B}} |P(X' \in B, X' = Y') - P(Y' \in B, X' = Y')| +
\]
\[
+ \sup_{B \in \mathcal{B}} |P(X' \in B, X' \neq Y') - P(Y' \in B, X' \neq Y')|
\leq P(X' \neq Y').
\]

It can be proved that there always exists a coupling for which there is equality in (2.16) ([20] p. 19).

**Couplings to bound \( d_{TV}(W, W + 1) \), where \( W \) is a sum of independent integer valued random variables**

Let \( X_1, X_2, \ldots \) be independent integer valued random variables, and let \( W_n = \sum_{j=1}^{n} X_j, n = 1, 2, \ldots \) be a random walk that starts form 0 at the initial moment and has consecutive step sizes \( X_1', X_2', \ldots \). Assume there is a probability space \((\Omega, \mathcal{A}, P)\) on which random variables \( X_1', X_2', \ldots \) and \( X'_n, X''_n, \ldots \) are defined in such a way that both of the sequences consist of independent random variables and \( X_j \overset{D}{=} X'_j \overset{D}{=} X''_j, j = 1, 2, \ldots \). We identify each of these sequences with a random walk on the integers: let \( W' = (W'_0, W'_1, \ldots) \) be a random walk that starts form 0 at the initial moment and has consecutive step sizes \( X'_1, X'_2, \ldots \), that is

\[
W'_0 = 0 \text{ and } W'_n = \sum_{j=1}^{n} X'_j, n = 1, 2, \ldots,
\]

and let \( W'' = (W''_0, W''_1, \ldots) \) be a random walk that starts form 1 at the initial moment and has consecutive step sizes \( X''_1, X''_2, \ldots \), that is

\[
W''_0 = 1 \text{ and } W''_n = 1 + \sum_{j=1}^{n} X''_j, n = 1, 2, \ldots.
\]
Consider the random time
\[ T = \inf \{ k : W'_k = W''_k \} \]
when the random walks \( W' \) and \( W'' \) first meet. (We use the convention that the infimum of the empty set is infinity.) Put \( \tilde{W}'' = (\tilde{W}''_0, \tilde{W}''_1, \ldots) \), where
\[ \tilde{W}''_k = \begin{cases} W''_k, & k \leq T, \\ W'_k, & k > T \end{cases} \]
for each \( k \in \mathbb{N} \). It is evident that \( W'' \overset{D}{=} \tilde{W}'' \), particularly \( W'_n \overset{D}{=} \tilde{W}''_n \). Since \((W'_n, \tilde{W}''_n)\) is a coupling of \((W_n, W_n + 1)\), by the coupling inequality we have
\[ d_{TV}(W_n, W_n + 1) \leq P(W'_n \neq \tilde{W}''_n) = P(T > n). \] (2.17)

We see that if \( P(T < \infty) = 1 \), then \( d_{TV}(W_n, W_n + 1) \to 0 \) as \( n \to \infty \), and calculating \( P(T > n) \) yields a bound for the rate of convergence.

It is very important to note that we did not impose any condition on the relation between the random walks \( W' \) and \( W'' \). They can be independent, but they can also have any kind of dependence structure, we only required them to have the same step size distributions. Usually the goal is to define for each \( j = 1, 2, \ldots \) the joint distribution of the step sizes \( X'_j \) and \( X''_j \) in a way that ensures the finiteness and possibly the minimality of \( T \). In other words, one would like to construct couplings of the pairs \((X'_j, X''_j)\), \( j = 1, 2, \ldots \), which guarantee that the random walks \( W' \) and \( W'' \) should meet soon, and therefore that \( P(T > n) \) is small. One of the ways to do this is given by the so-called Mineka coupling ([20] p. 44), which we now define.

Fix an arbitrary \( j \in \{1, 2, \ldots \} \). Set \( p_{j,i} = P(X_j = i), i \in \mathbb{Z} \). We define the distribution of the steps \((X'_j, X''_j)\) in \( \mathbb{Z}^2 \) by
\[
\begin{align*}
P((-X'_j, X''_j) = (i-1, i)) &= \frac{1}{2} \min\{p_{j,i-1}, p_{j,i}\}, \\
P((-X'_j, X''_j) = (i, i-1)) &= \frac{1}{2} \min\{p_{j,i-1}, p_{j,i}\}, \\
P((-X'_j, X''_j) = (i, i)) &= p_{j,i} - \frac{1}{2} \min\{p_{j,i-1}, p_{j,i}\} - \frac{1}{2} \min\{p_{j,i}, p_{j,i+1}\}
\end{align*}
\]
Thus the couplings force the two random walks to run at most distance 1 apart, in fact, \( \{S_k := W'_k - W''_k\}_{k \in \mathbb{N}} \) defines a symmetric random walk, that starts from \(-1\) at time 0, and at each step either stays in place or increases or decreases by 1.

We only calculate the bound for \( P(T > n) \) resulting form the Mineka coupling in the case when the \( X_j, j = 1, 2, \ldots, \) are iid random variables with discrete uniform distribution on \( \{1, 2, \ldots, L\} \) for some integer \( L \geq 2 \), that is \( p_{j,i} = \frac{1}{L}, i = 1, 2, \ldots, L, j = 1, 2, \ldots \). In this case
\[
P(X'_j - X''_j = 1) = P(X'_j - X''_j = -1) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \min\{p_{j,i-1}, p_{j,i}\} = \frac{L-1}{2L}
\]
and
\[
P(X'_j - X''_j = 0) = 1 - \sum_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} \min\{p_{j,i-1}, p_{j,i}\} = \frac{1}{L}.
\]
Using the properties of \( \{S_k\}_{k \in \mathbb{N}} \), namely that it evolves by unit steps, that the reflection principle can be applied to it, and that \( S_n \) has symmetric distribution around \(-1\), we obtain

\[
\begin{align*}
P(T > n) &= P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0) \\
&= P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0, S_n = 0) + P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0, S_n < 0) + P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0, S_n > 0) \\
&= P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0, S_n = 0) + 2P(\max_{0 \leq k \leq n} S_k \geq 0, S_n > 0) \\
&= P(S_n = 0) + 2P(S_n > 0) \\
&= P(S_n = 0) + P(S_n > 0) + P(S_n < -2) \\
&= P(S_n = -1).
\end{align*}
\]

Thus \( P(T > n) \leq \max_{i \in \mathbb{Z}} P(S_n = i) \), and by Lemma 4.7 of Barbour and Xia [7], we have

\[
P(T > n) \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( n \min \left\{ \frac{L - 1}{L}, \frac{1}{2} \right\} \right)^{-\frac{1}{2}} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2n}}.
\]

It follows by (2.17) that if \( W_n \) is a sum of \( n \) independent uniformly distributed random variables on \( \{1, 2, \ldots, L\} \), then

\[
d_{TV}(W_n, W_n + 1) \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2n}}. \quad (2.18)
\]

We shall see in Section 6.1 that this inequality can be improved.
Chapter 3

Gumbel-like approximation

3.1 Preliminaries and results

In this chapter we are interested in the case of the coupon collector’s problem when \( n \geq m + 1 \) is large compared to \( m \), so we fix a non-negative integer \( m \), and we shall look at the asymptotic behavior of the distribution function

\[
F_{n,m}(x) := P\left( \frac{1}{n} W_{n,m} - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} \leq x \right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
\]

as \( n \to \infty \).

As mentioned in the introduction, in 1961 Erdős and Rényi [12] proved for the case \( m = 0 \), a full collection, that the limiting distribution is the Gumbel extreme value distribution, shifted by Euler’s constant \( \gamma = \lim_{n \to \infty} \left( \sum_{k=1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} - \log n \right) = 0, 577215 \ldots \), so that

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} F_{n,0}(x) = F_0(x) := e^{-e^{-x+\gamma}}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}.
\]

For an arbitrary non-negative integer \( m \), this beautiful result was extended by Baum and Billingsley [8] shortly thereafter, who proved that

\[
\lim_{n \to \infty} F_{n,m}(x) = F_m(x) := \frac{1}{m!} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{-(m+1)(y+C_m)} e^{-e^{-y+C_m}} \, dy = \frac{1}{m!} \int_{-\infty}^{x+C_m} e^{-(m+1)y} e^{-y} \, dy, \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
\]

where \( C_m := \gamma - \sum_{k=1}^{m} \frac{1}{k} \). Much later Csörgő [11] refined this general result, proving that the rate of convergence in it is surprisingly fast, namely

\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F_{n,m}(x) - F_m(x)| \leq D_m \frac{\log n}{n} \quad \text{(3.2)}
\]

for some constant \( D_m > 0 \) depending only on \( m \).

In this thesis, for every \( m \) we give a one-term asymptotic expansion \( F_m(\cdot) + G_{n,m}(\cdot) \) that approximates \( F_{n,m}(\cdot) \) with the uniform order of \( 1/n \) such that the explicit sequence of

\[
\]
functions $G_{n,m}(\cdot)$ has the uniform order of $(\log n)/n$. In particular, it follows that the rate of convergence in (3.2) can not be improved.

To introduce $G_{n,m}(\cdot)$, consider the density function of the limiting distribution:

\[ f_m(x) := F'_m(x) = \frac{1}{m!} e^{-e^{-x+C_m}} e^{-(m+1)(x+C_m)} = \frac{1}{m!} e^{-e_m(x)} e^{m+1}_m(x), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, \]

where $e_m(x) := e^{-(x+C_m)}$, whose second derivative by simple calculation is

\[ f''_m(x) = f_m(x) \left[ e^{m+3}_m(x) - (2m+3)e^{m+2}_m(x) + (m+1)^2 e^{m+1}_m(x) \right] \quad (3.3) \]

for all $x \in \mathbb{R}$. For every $k \in \mathbb{N}$, consider also the density function

\[ h_k(x) := \begin{cases} ke^{-kx}, & \text{if } x \geq 0; \\ 0, & \text{if } x < 0 \end{cases} \quad (3.4) \]

of the exponential distribution with mean $1/k$, and the convolution

\[ [f''_m \ast h_k](x) = \int_{0}^{\infty} f''_m(x-y)h_k(y)\,dy = \int_{-\infty}^{x} h_k(x-y)f''_m(y)\,dy, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \quad (3.5) \]

Then, for $n \geq m + 2$, our basic sequence of functions will be

\[ G_{n,m}(x) = -\frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} \int_{-\infty}^{x} [f''_m \ast h_k](u)\,du, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \quad (3.6) \]

It is natural to consider the following version of the Baum–Billingsley theorem:

\[ F^*_m(x) := \lim_{n \to \infty} F^*_{n,m}(x) \quad \text{where} \quad F^*_{n,m}(x) := P \left( \frac{1}{n} W_{n,m} - \log n \leq x \right), \]

so that, clearly,

\[ F^*_{n,m}(x) = F_{n,m} \left( x - \left[ \sum_{k=1}^{n} {1 \over k} - \log n \right] + \sum_{k=1}^{m} {1 \over k} \right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}, \]

for all $n \geq m + 2$, and hence

\[ F^*_m(x) = F_m \left( x - \gamma + \sum_{k=1}^{m} {1 \over k} \right) = F_m(x - C_m), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \]

For every $n \geq m + 2$, the corresponding version of the function in (3.6) is

\[ G^*_n,m(x) = G_{n,m} \left( x - \left[ \sum_{k=1}^{n} {1 \over k} - \log n \right] + \sum_{k=1}^{m} {1 \over k} \right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \]

With all asymptotic relations meant throughout as $n \to \infty$ unless otherwise specified, our main result is the following
Theorem 3.1.1 For every fixed \( m \in \{0, 1, 2, \ldots \} \),
\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F_{n,m}(x) - [F_m(x) + G_{n,m}(x)]| = O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right),
\]

(3.7)
for the functions \( G_{n,m}(\cdot) \) given in (3.6), for which there exist a constant \( K_m > 0 \), a point \( x_m \in \mathbb{R} \), a positive function \( c_m(\cdot) \) and a threshold function \( n_m(\cdot) \in \mathbb{N} \), all depending only on \( m \), such that
\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |G_{n,m}(x)| \leq K_m \frac{\log n}{n}, \quad n \geq m + 2,
\]

(3.8)
but
\[
|G_{n,m}(x)| \geq c_m(x) \frac{\log n}{n} \text{ for all } x \in (-\infty, x_m),
\]

(3.9)
whenever \( n \geq n_m(x) \). Furthermore,
\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |F^*_{n,m}(x) - [F_m^*(x) + G_{n,m}^*(x)]| = O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right),
\]

(3.10)
where the sequence \( \{G_{n,m}^*(\cdot)\}_{n=m+1}^\infty \) of functions has the same properties as the sequence \( \{G_{n,m}(\cdot)\}_{n=m+1}^\infty \) in the first statement.

We finish this section by examining the optimality of the results of Theorem 3.1.1.

It is easy to give an argument showing that any sequence of discrete probability laws corresponding to some random variables \( X_n \) with finite second moments, can not be approximated with an absolutely continuous distribution in Kolmogorov distance with an error order that is smaller than \( 1/d_n \), where \( d_n = \#\{x \in [-2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n}, 2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n}] : P(X_n = x) > 0\} \). In order to prove this, we may assume without loss of generality that \( E(X_n) = 0 \) for each \( n \in \mathbb{N} \). For a fixed \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), by Chebisev’s inequality, \( P(|X_n| \geq 2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n}) \leq 1/4 \), which implies that \( X_n \) maps into the interval \([ -2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n}, 2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n} ] \) with probability at least 3/4, and thus there exists a point \( x_n \in [ -2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n}, 2\sqrt{\text{Var}X_n} ] \) for which \( P(X_n = x_n) \geq 3/(4d_n) \). This means that the distribution function of \( X_n \) has a jump at least \( 3/(4d_n) \) big at \( x_n \), and hence can not be approximated at that point with a continuous function any better than \( 3/(8d_n) \).

Now, the distribution function \( F_{n,m} \) defined in (3.1) corresponds to the discrete random variable \( (W_{n,m} - \mu_n)/n \) for which \( d_n \) is of order \( n \), because one can calculate that \( \sigma_n \sim c_n n \) with some \( c_m \) constant depending only on our fixed \( m \). It follows that the supremum distance of \( F_{n,m} \) to any continuous function, in particular \( F_m + G_{n,m} \), can not decrease in a faster order than \( 1/n \), as \( n \to \infty \). This not only proves that the error order in (3.7) is sharp, but also that no longer asymptotic expansion of \( F_{n,m} \) than the one given by (3.7) can improve the current error order \( 1/n \).

3.2 Proofs

We shall now verify the theorem above. Before embarking on the proof of (3.7), we analyze the function \( G_{n,m}(\cdot) \) defined in (3.6), to show in particular that this formula makes sense,
and prove its properties stated in (3.8) and (3.9). We begin with claiming that for every $l \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$
\int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{-\varepsilon_m(u)} e_{m}^{l}(u) \, du = \int_{\varepsilon_m(x)}^{\infty} e^{-v} v^{l-1} \, dv = e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} (l - 1)! \sum_{j=0}^{l-1} \frac{e_{m}^{j}(x)}{j!}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
$$

(3.11)

for the functions $e_{m}(x) = e^{-(x+C_{m})}$ in (3.3). Indeed, this is true for $l = 1$, and since

$$
\int_{\varepsilon_m(x)}^{\infty} e^{-v} v^{k} \, dv = e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} e_{m}^{k}(x) + k \int_{\varepsilon_m(x)}^{\infty} e^{-v} v^{k-1} \, dv,
$$

it follows for $l = k + 1$ if it holds for $k \in \mathbb{N}$. So, (3.11) follows by induction. Also,

$$
\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} e_{m}^{l}(x) \, dx = \Gamma(l) = (l - 1)! \quad \text{for all} \quad l \in \mathbb{N},
$$

(3.12)

and we see from (3.3) that $f''_{m}(\cdot)$ is integrable on $\mathbb{R}$; in fact, $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f''_{m}(x) \, dx = 0$.

As is well known, the convolution of two integrable functions is integrable. Since for our convolution, from (3.5),

$$
[f_{m}^{'} \ast h_{k}](x) = k e^{-kx} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{ky} f''_{m}(y) \, dy, \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
$$

(3.13)

we have $|[f_{m}^{'} \ast h_{k}](x)| \leq k \int_{-\infty}^{x} |f''_{m}(y)| \, dy$, its integrability follows directly by (3.3) and (3.11). The last inequality also implies that $\lim_{x \to -\infty} [f''_{m} \ast h_{k}](x) = 0$; in fact, since $\lim_{x \to -\infty} f''_{m}(x) = 0$ directly from (3.3), using the dominated convergence theorem in the first formula in (3.5) we also see that $\lim_{x \to -\infty} [f_{m}^{'} \ast h_{k}](x) = 0$. The first two of the last three properties already make (3.6) meaningful, so that, substituting (3.13) into that formula, for the derivative at each $x \in \mathbb{R}$ we get

$$
G_{n,m}^{'}(x) = -\frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} [f''_{m} \ast h_{k}](x) = -\frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ e^{-kx} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{ky} f''_{m}(v) \, dv \right].
$$

(3.14)

Next we note that the derivative of the function in (3.11),

$$
(e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} e_{m}^{l}(x))' = e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} [e_{m}^{l+1}(x) - le_{m}^{l}(x)],
$$

(3.15)

is zero at $x_{0} := -\log l - C_{m}$, is positive for $x < x_{0}$ and negative for $x > x_{0}$. Thus

$$
\max_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \{ e^{-\varepsilon_m(x)} e_{m}^{l}(x) \} = e^{-\varepsilon_m(x_{0})} e_{m}^{l}(x_{0}) = \left( \frac{l}{e} \right)^{l}, \quad l \in \mathbb{N}.
$$

(3.16)

We also see from (3.15) and (3.12) that in fact the $j$-th derivative $f_{m}^{(j)}(\cdot)$ of $f_{m}(\cdot)$ is integrable on $\mathbb{R}$ and $\lim_{|x| \to \infty} f_{m}^{(j)}(x) = 0$ for every $j \in \{0\} \cup \mathbb{N}$, not just for $j = 0, 1, 2$, and hence, as an extension of (3.13), the convolutions

$$
[f_{m}^{(j)} \ast h_{k}](x) = k e^{-kx} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{ky} f_{m}^{(j)}(y) \, dy, \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
$$

22
make sense as integrable functions for all \( j \in \{0\} \cup \mathbb{N} \) and \( k \in \mathbb{N} \).

**Proof of (3.8).** To this end, with (3.6) in mind, by (3.13) we have

\[
\left| \int_{-\infty}^{x} \left[ f''_m \ast h_k \right](u) \, du \right| \leq \int_{-\infty}^{x} k e^{-ku} \left| \int_{-\infty}^{u} e^{kv} f''_m(v) \, dv \right| \, du
\]

\[
= \int_{-\infty}^{x} k e^{-ku} \left| \frac{e^{ku}}{k} f''_m(u) - \int_{-\infty}^{u} \frac{e^{kv}}{k} f''_m(v) \, dv \right| \, du
\]

\[
\leq \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{-ku} \left\{ e^{ku} |f''_m(u)| + \int_{-\infty}^{u} e^{kv} |f''_m(v)| \, dv \right\} \, du
\]

\[
\leq \int_{-\infty}^{x} |f''_m(u)| \, du + \int_{-\infty}^{x} \left[ \int_{-\infty}^{u} |f''_m(v)| \, dv \right] \, du
\]

for all \( x \in \mathbb{R} \), regardless of what \( k \in \mathbb{N} \) is. Starting from (3.3) and using (3.15), it is clear that \( |f''_m(v)| \) in the inner integral of the second term is bounded by a linear combination of functions of the form \( e^{-e_m(v)} e^m_n(v) \), in which all the exponents \( l \) and all the coefficients depend only on \( m \). Hence, after an application of (3.11), that inner integral itself is bounded by a similar linear combination, in the variable \( u \), that has the same property. Thus, by another application of (3.11), the sum of the two terms is bounded by a linear combination of functions of the form \( e^{-e_m(x)} e^m_n(x) \), in which both the coefficients and all the exponents \( j \) depend only on \( m \). But all these functions are bounded by (3.16), and hence \( \left| \int_{-\infty}^{x} [f''_m \ast h_k](u) \, du \right| \leq 2K_m/3 \) for all \( x \in \mathbb{R} \) and \( k \in \mathbb{N} \), for some constant \( K_m > 0 \) depending only on \( m \). Therefore, substituting this into the obvious term-wise bound for (3.6),

\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |G_{n,m}(x)| \leq \frac{K_m}{3n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} \leq \frac{K_m}{3n} \left[ 1 + \int_{1}^{n} \frac{1}{x} \, dx \right] \leq K_m \frac{\log n}{n} \tag{3.17}
\]

for all \( n \geq m + 2 \geq 2 \), which is (3.8).

Before attending to the proof of (3.9), we note that replacing \( f''_m \) and \( f'''_m \) by \( f^{(j)}_m \) and \( f^{(j+1)}_m \), respectively, the argument in the proof of (3.8) above gives

\[
\int_{-\infty}^{x} \left| \left[ f^{(j)}_m \ast h_k \right](u) \right| \, du \leq K_m^{(j)} \text{ for all } x \in \mathbb{R} \text{ and } k \in \mathbb{N}, \tag{3.18}
\]

for every \( j \in \{0\} \cup \mathbb{N} \), where the constant \( K_m^{(j)} > 0 \) depends only on \( m \) and \( j \).

**Proof of (3.9).** Examining the behavior of \( f''_m(\cdot) \) given in (3.3), we see that it first increases from \( 0 = f''_m(-\infty) \) on a half-line and eventually reaches \( 0 = f''_m(\infty) \). Thus the smallest value \( x_m \in \mathbb{R} \) where \( f''_m(\cdot) \) has a local maximum is well defined. Consider any \( x \) in the half-line \((-\infty, x_m]\). Then the convolution \( [f''_m \ast h_k](x) \), given in (3.13) is positive since the integrand is positive on \((-\infty, x)\). Thus the first two displayed lines in the proof of (3.8) above become

\[
\int_{-\infty}^{x} [f''_m \ast h_k](u) \, du = \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du - \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{-ku} \left[ \int_{-\infty}^{u} e^{kv} f''_m(v) \, dv \right] \, du
\]

\[
= \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du - \frac{1}{k} \int_{-\infty}^{x} [f''_m \ast h_k](u) \, du
\]

\[
\geq \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du - \frac{K_m^{(3)}}{k},
\]
where the inequality is by (3.18) and the first term of the lower bound is positive. Hence, still for the same \( x \in (-\infty, x_m] \),

\[
|G_{n,m}(x)| = \frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} \int_{-\infty}^{x} [f''_m * h_k](u) \, du \\
\geq \frac{1}{2n} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} - K_m^{(3)} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k^2} \\
\geq \frac{1}{2n} \left\{ \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du \right\} \left\{ \int_{m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{x} \, dx \right\} - K_m^{(3)} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k^2} \\
= \log n \left\{ \left( \frac{1}{2} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du \right) \left\{ 1 - \frac{\log(m+1)}{\log n} \right\} - \frac{\pi^2 K_m^{(3)}}{12 \log n} \right\} \\
=: \log n \frac{c_{n,m}(x)}{n}.
\]

Since \( \lim_{n \to \infty} c_{n,m}(x) = 2c_m(x) \), where \( c_m(x) = \frac{1}{4} \int_{-\infty}^{x} f''_m(u) \, du > 0 \), there exists a threshold \( n_m(x) \in \mathbb{N} \) such that \( |G_{n,m}(x)| \geq c_m(x)(\log n)/n \) whenever \( n \geq n_m(x) \), which is the statement in (3.9).

We need one more preliminary remark for later use. Noticing that

\[ 2L_m/3 := \max_{v \in \mathbb{R}} |f''_m(v)| < \infty \]

by (3.16), it is that

\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} |G'_{n,m}(x)| \leq \frac{L_m}{3n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ e^{-kx} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{kv} \, dv \right] = \frac{L_m}{3n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} \leq \frac{L_m \log n}{n} \tag{3.19}
\]

for all \( n \geq m + 2 \geq 2 \), which is obtained from (3.14) as in (3.17).

**Proof of (3.7).** The proof being Fourier-analytic, the functions \( G_{n,m}(\cdot) \) are first identified in terms of Fourier transforms. We approximate the characteristic function \( \varphi_{nm}(\cdot) = \varphi_{n,m}(\cdot) \) of \( F_{n,m}(\cdot) \) by the sum of the characteristic function \( \varphi_m(\cdot) \) of the limiting distribution \( F_m(\cdot) \) and a “correcting” function. We achieve this in four steps. Starting from \( \varphi_{nm}(\cdot) \), we define the functions \( \psi_{nm,1}(\cdot), \psi_{nm,2}(\cdot), \psi_{nm,3}(\cdot) \) and \( \psi_{nm,4}(\cdot) \), where each of these functions is an estimate of the preceding one — each time obtained by keeping only some leading terms from the series expansion of an ingredient —, and \( \varphi_{nm}(\cdot) \approx \psi_{nm,4}(\cdot) = \varphi_m(\cdot) + \psi_{nm}(\cdot) \) holds for some function \( \psi_{nm}(\cdot) \). For \( t \in \mathbb{R} \), the approximations yield the error functions

\[
\rho_{nm,1}(t) := \varphi_{nm}(t) - \psi_{nm,1}(t), \\
\rho_{nm,2}(t) := \psi_{nm,1}(t) - \psi_{nm,2}(t), \\
\rho_{nm,3}(t) := \psi_{nm,2}(t) - \psi_{nm,3}(t), \\
\rho_{nm,4}(t) := \psi_{nm,3}(t) - \psi_{nm,4}(t) = \psi_{nm,4}(t) - [\varphi_m(t) + \psi_{nm}(t)], \tag{3.20}
\]

and \( G_{n,m}(\cdot) \) will be the function whose Fourier–Stieltjes transform is \( \psi_{nm}(\cdot) \).
First, since the characteristic function of the geometric distribution with success probability \( p \in (0, 1) \) is \((1 + \frac{1}{p} (e^{-it} - 1))^{-1}, t \in \mathbb{R}\), where \( i \) is the imaginary unit,

\[
\varphi_{nm}(t) = \varphi_{n,m}(t) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} dF_{n,m}(x) = \mathbb{E} \left( \exp \left\{ it \left[ \frac{1}{n} W_n(m) - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} \right] \right\} \right)
\]

\[
= \prod_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{e^{-it/k}}{1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1)}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R},
\]

by (1.1). Also, for all \( t \in \mathbb{R} \) the limiting characteristic function is

\[
\varphi_m(t) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} dF_m(x) = \mathbb{E} \left( \exp \left\{ it \left[ \sum_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{k} - \frac{1}{k} \right) \right] \right\} \right)
\]

\[
= \prod_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \frac{e^{-it/k}}{1 - \frac{it}{k}} = \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] \right\}, \quad (3.21)
\]

which follows from the observation of Baum and Billingsley [8] that

\[
F_m(x) = \mathbb{P} \left( \sum_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{k} - \frac{1}{k} \right) \leq x \right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R},
\]

itself suggested by (1.1), where the \( Y_{m+1}, Y_{m+2}, \ldots \) are independent random variables such that \( Y_k \) has the exponential distribution with mean \( 1/k \), and hence the characteristic function \( \mathbb{E}(e^{itY_k}) = 1/(1 - \frac{it}{k}), t \in \mathbb{R} \). Setting

\[
A_{nm}(t) = \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] \right\}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R}, \quad (3.22)
\]

and noticing that for every \( t \in \mathbb{R} \),

\[
\varphi_{nm}(t) = \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1) \right) \right] \right\}
\]

\[
= A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \frac{1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1)}{1 - \frac{it}{k}} \right\}
\]

\[
= A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \frac{1 + \frac{n}{k} \left( \frac{1}{n} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{(it/n)^2}{1 + \frac{n}{k}} + \sum_{l=3}^{\infty} \frac{(-it/n)^l}{l!} \right)}{1 - \frac{it}{k}} \right\},
\]

25
for \(|t| < n\) we introduce the first sequence of intermediate approximative functions

\[
\psi_{nm,1}(t) := A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \frac{1 + \frac{n}{k} \left[ \frac{-i}{n} + \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \right]}{1 - \frac{i}{k}} \right\}
\]

\[
= A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} \right) \right\}
\]

\[
= A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} + \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{l-1}}{l} \left( \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} \right)^l \right] \right\},
\]

where the expansion of the logarithm is justified because the inequality

\[
\left| \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} \right| = \frac{t^2}{2n} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}} < 1
\]

holds whenever \(|t| < n\). For all such \(t\), the second intermediate sequence is

\[
\psi_{nm,2}(t) := A_{nm}(t) \exp \left\{ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right\}
\]

\[
= A_{nm}(t) \left\{ 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} + \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left( \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right)^l \right\},
\]

while the third and the fourth are

\[
\psi_{nm,3}(t) := A_{nm}(t) \left\{ 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right\}
\]

and

\[
\psi_{nm,4}(t) := \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] \right\} \left\{ 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right\}
\]

\[
= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{\infty} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] \right\} \left\{ 1 - \frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(it)^2}{k^2} \right\} \frac{1}{k - it},
\]

and we notice from (3.21) that \(\psi_{nm,4}(t) = \varphi_m(t) + \psi_{nm}(t)\) for all \(t \in (-n, n)\), where

\[
\psi_{nm}(t) := -\frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R},
\]

Here \(k/(k - it)\) is the characteristic function of the exponential distribution with mean \(1/k\), so that

\[
\frac{k}{k - it} = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} h_k(x) \, dx, \quad t \in \mathbb{R},
\]
where $h_k(\cdot)$ is the density function in (3.4). Also, since by (3.50) below the function $t \mapsto t^j \varphi_m(t)$ is integrable on $\mathbb{R}$ for every $j \in \mathbb{N}$, we can differentiate the density inversion formula twice to obtain $f''_m(\cdot)$ of (3.4) as the inverse Fourier transform

$$f''_m(x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-itx} (it)^2 \varphi_m(t) \, dt, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}.$$  

Since $f''_m(\cdot)$ is also integrable, as established at (2.2), this can be inverted to get

$$(it)^2 \varphi_m(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} f''_m(x) \, dx, \quad t \in \mathbb{R}.$$  

The two Fourier transforms then combine to give

$$\frac{k}{k-i} (it)^2 \varphi_m(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} [f''_m * h_k](x) \, dx, \quad t \in \mathbb{R},$$

for the integrable convolution in (3.13). Therefore, by (3.14) we recognize (3.24) as

$$\psi_{nm}(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} \left( - \frac{1}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k} [f''_m * h_k](x) \right) \, dx$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} G'_{n,m}(x) \, dx = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} dG_{n,m}(x), \quad t \in \mathbb{R},$$

for the integrable function $G'_{n,m}(\cdot)$ for which $\lim_{|x| \to \infty} G'_{n,m}(x) = 0$, so that the function $G_{n,m}(\cdot)$ is of bounded variation on the whole line $\mathbb{R}$.

Then the deviation $\Delta_n := \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{nm}(x) - [F_m(x) + G_{nm}(x)] \right|$ in (3.7) may be estimated through Esseen’s inequality (see Section 2.2.), which we use in the form

$$\Delta_n \leq \frac{b}{2\pi} \int_{-cn}^{cn} \left| \frac{\varphi_{nm}(t) - [\varphi_m(t) + \psi_{nm}(t)]}{t} \right| \, dt + c_b \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| f_m(x) + G'_{n,m}(x) \right|_{cn},$$

where $b > 1$ is arbitrary and $c_b > 0$ is a constant depending only on $b$ and, due to the restriction of the arguments $t$ of the intermediate functions $\psi_{nm,j}(t)$, $j = 1, 2, 3$, to $(-n, n)$, the constant $c$ is taken from the interval $(0, 1)$. Since $\max_{x \in \mathbb{R}} f_m(x) = ((m+1)/e)^{m+1}/m!$ by (3.16), we see by (3.19) that the second term here is $O(1/n)$. Thus the proof of (3.7) reduces to demonstrating that the same holds for the first term as well. This will be split in four parts according to (3.20): we have

$$\int_{-cn}^{cn} \left| \frac{\varphi_{nm}(t) - [\varphi_m(t) + \psi_{nm}(t)]}{t} \right| \, dt \leq \sum_{j=1}^{4} R_{nm,j}$$

and, introducing the set $H_{nc} = [-cn, -1) \cup (1, cn]$, it suffices to show that

$$R_{nm,j} = \frac{1}{2n} \int_{-cn}^{cn} \left| \frac{\rho_{nm,j}(t)}{t} \right| \, dt = \int_{-1}^{1} \left| \frac{\rho_{nm,j}(t)}{t} \right| \, dt + \int_{H_{nc}} \left| \frac{\rho_{nm,j}(t)}{t} \right| \, dt$$

$$=: I_{nm,j}^1 + I_{nm,j}^2 = O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \quad \text{for each} \quad j = 1, 2, 3, 4. \quad (3.25)$$

27
We fix \( c \in (0, 1) \), let \( n > 1/c \), and, unless otherwise stated, assume in all formulae containing the variable \( t \) throughout that \( t \in [-cn, cn] \).

The case of \( R_{nm,1} \). By (3.20) and the definitions between (3.22) and (3.24),

\[
|\rho_{nm,1}(t)| = |\varphi_{nm}(t) - \psi_{nm,1}(t)|
\]

\[
= \left| \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left[ 1 + \frac{n}{k} \left( e^{-it/n} - 1 \right) \right] \right\} 
- \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right] - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left[ 1 - \frac{it}{k} + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right] \right\} \right|.
\]

The inequality

\[
|e^z - e^w| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( |e^z| + |e^w| \right) |z - w|, \quad z, w \in \mathbb{C},
\]

where \( \mathbb{C} \) denotes the complex plane, yields

\[
|\rho_{nm,1}(t)| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( |\varphi_{nm}(t)| + |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| \right) \delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t),
\]

where

\[
\delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left[ 1 + \frac{n}{k} \left( e^{-it/n} - 1 \right) \right] - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left| z_{nk}(t) \right| \right|.
\]

We give upper bounds for each of the functions on the right-hand side of (3.27).

As usual, let \( \Re z \) denote the real part of \( z \in \mathbb{C} \). Clearly,

\[
\delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t) \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left| \log z_{nk}(t) \right| = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left| \log \frac{1}{z_{nk}(t)} \right|.
\]

First we show that \( \Re z_{nk}(t) \geq 1/2 \), so that \( 1/z_{nk}(t) \) is an inner point of the circle of center \((1,0)\) and radius 1 in \( \mathbb{C} \), and hence its logarithm can be expanded about the point \((1,0)\).

We have

\[
\Re z_{nk}(t) - \frac{1}{2} = \Re \left( 1 + \frac{n}{k} \cos \frac{t}{n} - \frac{n}{k} \sin \frac{t}{n} \right) - \frac{1}{2} = \frac{(1 + \frac{n}{k} \cos \frac{t}{n} - \frac{n}{k} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{1}{k})^2}{1 - \frac{t^2}{2nk}} = \frac{(2\frac{n}{k} - \frac{t^2}{k^2}) \cos \frac{t}{n} + 2\frac{t}{k} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t}{k} + 1}{2 \left( 1 - \frac{t^2}{2nk} \right)^2 + \frac{t^2}{k^2}}
\]

\[
= \frac{(\frac{tn}{k} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t^2}{k^2} \cos \frac{t}{n}) + (\frac{tn}{k^2} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t^4}{4nk^2}) + (\frac{tn}{2k} \sin \frac{t}{n} + 2\frac{t}{k} \cos \frac{t}{n} - \frac{tn}{k} + \frac{2n}{k} + 1)}{2 \left( 1 - \frac{t^2}{2nk} \right)^2 + \frac{t^2}{k^2}}
\]

28
This is an even function of \( t \), so we can assume that \( t \geq 0 \). The denominator is obviously positive, and we are going to show that each of the three terms in the numerator is non-negative. Beginning with the first term, we see that

\[
\frac{tn}{k^2} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t^2}{k^2} \cos \frac{t}{n} = \frac{t}{k^2} \left\{ n \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^l}{(2l+1)!} \left( \frac{t}{n} \right)^{2l+1} - \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^l}{(2l)!} \left( \frac{t}{n} \right)^{2l} \right\}
\]

\[
= \frac{t}{k^2} \sum_{l=1, l \text{ odd}, l=1}^{\infty} (-1)^l \left( \frac{1}{(2l+1)!} - \frac{1}{(2l)!} \right) \frac{t^{2l+1}}{n^{2l}}
\]

\[
= \frac{t}{k^2} \sum_{l=1, l \text{ odd}, l=1}^{\infty} \left[ \frac{1}{(2l)!} - \frac{1}{(2l+1)!} \right] \frac{t^{2l+1}}{n^{2l}} - \frac{1}{(2l+2)!} - \frac{1}{(2l+3)!} \frac{t^{2l+3}}{n^{2l}}
\]

\[
\geq \frac{t}{k^2} \sum_{l=1, l \text{ odd}, l=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{(2l)!} - \frac{1}{(2l+1)!} \right) - \frac{1}{(2l+2)!} + \frac{1}{(2l+3)!} \frac{t^{2l+1}}{n^{2l}}
\]

\[
= \frac{t}{k^2} \sum_{l=1, l \text{ odd}, l=1}^{\infty} \frac{(2l+3)(4l^2 + 4l - 1) + 1}{(2l+3)!} \frac{t^{2l+1}}{n^{2l}} \geq 0,
\]

where the inequality is by \( \frac{1}{n} < c < 1 \). Concerning the second term, we note that \( \sin x \geq \frac{x^2}{2} \) if \( 0 \leq x < 1 \). Therefore, since \( \frac{1}{n} < 1 \), we have

\[
\frac{tn}{2k^2} \sin \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t^4}{4n^2k^2} \geq \frac{tn}{2k^2} \frac{t^2}{2n^2} - \frac{t^4}{4n^2k^2} = \frac{t^2}{4k^2} \left( \frac{t}{n} - \left( \frac{t}{n} \right)^2 \right) \geq 0.
\]

Finally, the third term can be settled using \( t < n \) and the inequalities \( \sin x \geq x - \frac{x^3}{6} \) and \( \cos x \geq 1 - \frac{x^2}{2} \), both valid if \( 0 \leq x \leq 1 \). Indeed,

\[
\frac{tn}{2k^2} \sin \frac{t}{n} + 2 \frac{n}{k} \cos \frac{t}{n} - 2 \frac{n}{k} + 1 \geq \frac{tn}{2k^2} \left( \frac{t}{n} - \frac{t^3}{6n^3} \right) + 2 \frac{n}{k} \left( 1 - \frac{t^2}{2n^2} \right) - 2 \frac{n}{k} + 1
\]

\[
= \frac{t^2}{2k^2} - \frac{t^4}{12k^2n^2} - \frac{t^2}{kn} + 1
\]

\[
\geq \frac{t^2}{2k^2} - \frac{t^2}{12k^2} - \frac{t}{k} + 1 = \frac{5t^2 - 12kt + 12k^2}{12k^2} > 0.
\]

Returning now to (3.28), we can expand the logarithm:

\[
\delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t) \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left| \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{j-1}}{j} \left[ \frac{1}{z_{nk}(t)} - 1 \right]^j \right| \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \left| \frac{z_{nk}(t) - 1}{z_{nk}(t)} \right|^j. \quad (3.29)
\]

The inequalities

\[
\left| e^{iu} - \sum_{j=0}^{2} \frac{(iu)^j}{j!} \right| \leq \frac{|u|^3}{3!}, \quad u \in \mathbb{R}, \quad \text{and} \quad 1 - \cos x \geq \frac{4}{\pi^2} x^2, \quad 0 \leq x \leq \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad (3.30)
\]
give the bound
\[ \left| \frac{z_{nk}(t) - 1}{z_{nk}(t)} \right| = \frac{n}{k} \left| \frac{e^{-it/n} - 1 + \frac{it}{n} - \frac{(it)^2}{2n^2}}{1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1)} \right| \leq \frac{n}{k} \left| \left( 1 - \frac{t}{k} \right) \left( 1 - \frac{8 \pi^2 n}{k} \right) \right| - i \frac{t}{k} \sin \frac{t}{n} \]
\[ = \frac{|t|^3}{6kn^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 + 2 \frac{n}{k} (\frac{n}{k} - 1) (1 - \cos \frac{|t|}{n})}} \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6kn^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 + \frac{8 \pi^2 n}{k} (\frac{n}{k} - 1) \frac{t^2}{n^2}}} \]
\[ = \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + \frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{\frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} \]

which, for any \( k \in \{m + 1, m + 2, \ldots, n - 1\} \) and \( |t| < n \), is not greater than
\[ \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{\frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{\frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} = \frac{t^2 \pi}{n^2} < \frac{1}{3}. \]

Substituting these bounds into (3.29), we easily obtain
\[ \delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t) \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + \frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} \left[ 1 + \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \left( \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + \frac{8t^2}{\pi^2} (1 - \frac{1}{n})}} \right)^{j-1} \right] \]
\[ \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6n^2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2}} \left[ 1 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{3} \right)^{j-1} \right] = \frac{5}{24} \frac{|t|^3}{n^2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k}, \]
so that by (3.17),
\[ \delta_{nm}^{[1]}(t) \leq \frac{|t|^3 \log n}{n^2}. \] (3.31)

Next we consider \( |\varphi_{nm}(t)| \) in (3.27). Since \( \Re \log z = \log |z|, z \in \mathbb{C} \setminus \{0\}, \)
\[ |\varphi_{nm}(t)| = \left| \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1) \right) \right] \right\} \right| \]
\[ = \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left| 1 + \frac{n}{k} (e^{-it/n} - 1) \right| \right\} \]
\[ = \exp \left\{ - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left[ 1 + 2n \frac{n - k}{k^2} \left( 1 - \cos \frac{|t|}{n} \right) \right] \right\}. \]

As \( 0 \leq |t|/n \leq c < 1 < \pi/2 \), it follows from the second inequality in (3.30) that
\[ |\varphi_{nm}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 + \frac{8t^2 n - k}{\pi^2 n k^2} \right) \right\}. \] (3.32)

The terms in the sum are positive, so for \( n > 2(m + 1) \) the exponent is bounded by
\[ - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{[n/2]} \log \left[ 1 + \frac{8t^2 n - \frac{n}{2}}{n k^2} \right] \leq - \frac{1}{2} \int_{m+1}^{[n/2]} \log \left[ 1 + \frac{4t^2}{\pi^2 y^2} \right] dy =: I_{nm}^{1.0}, \]
where \(\lfloor \cdot \rfloor\) denotes integer part, because the terms in the last sum decrease as \(k\) increases. Substituting in the integral \(x = \frac{4t^2}{\pi^2y^2}\), so that \(y = \frac{2t}{\pi\sqrt{x}}\),

\[
I_{1,0}^{1,0} = -\frac{|t|}{2\pi} \left[ \log(1 + x) \right]_{x = \frac{4t}{(m+1)\pi}}^{\frac{2t}{(m+1)\pi}} \frac{1}{x^{3/2}} \, dx
\]

\[
= -\frac{|t|}{2\pi} \left[ -2 \log(1 + x) \right]_{x = \frac{4t}{(m+1)\pi}}^{\frac{2t}{(m+1)\pi}} - \frac{|t|}{\pi} \int_{\frac{4t}{(m+1)\pi}}^{\frac{2t}{(m+1)\pi}} \frac{1}{x^{3/2} (1 + x)} \, dx
\]

\[
= \frac{m+1}{2} \log \left( 1 + \frac{4t^2}{(m+1)^2\pi^2} \right) - \frac{n}{4} \log \left( 1 + \frac{16t^2}{n^2\pi^2} \right)
\]

\[
- \frac{2|t|}{\pi} \left[ \arctan \frac{2|t|}{(m+1)\pi} - \arctan \frac{4|t|}{n\pi} \right]
\]

Summarizing, at this stage we have

\[
|\varphi_{nm}(t)| \leq |t|^{m+1} \left( \frac{1}{\pi^2} + \frac{4}{(m+1)^2\pi^2} \right)^{\frac{m+1}{2}} \exp \left\{ -\frac{2|t|}{\pi} \left[ \arctan \frac{2|t|}{(m+1)\pi} - \arctan \frac{4|t|}{n\pi} \right] \right\}.
\]

Using \(|t| < n\) and assuming \(|t| \geq 1\), we can further simplify this to obtain

\[
|\varphi_{nm}(t)| \leq |t|^{m+1} \left( \frac{1}{\pi^2} + \frac{4}{(m+1)^2\pi^2} \right)^{\frac{m+1}{2}} \exp \left\{ -\frac{2|t|}{\pi} \left[ \arctan \frac{2|t|}{(m+1)\pi} - \arctan \frac{4|t|}{n\pi} \right] \right\}.
\]

If \(n > 2(m+1)\), then the \(\arctan\) expression in the exponent is a monotone increasing function of \(|t|\) because the numerator of the derivative \(d\{as/(1+bs)\}/ds\) is equal to \(a\) for any real constants \(a\) and \(b\). Hence for \(n > 2(m+1)\), which was already assumed above anyway to get to the previous bound,

\[
|\varphi_{nm}(t)| \leq d_{nm} |t|^{m+1} e^{-r_{nm}|t|}, \quad 1 \leq |t| < n,
\]

(3.33)

where

\[
d_{nm} = \left( 1 + \frac{4}{(m+1)^2\pi^2} \right)^{(m+1)/2} \left( 1 + \frac{16}{n^2\pi^2} \right)^{n/4} \to \left( 1 + \frac{4}{(m+1)^2\pi^2} \right)^{(m+1)/2} =: d_m
\]

and

\[
r_{nm} = \frac{2}{\pi} \arctan \left( \frac{2}{\pi} \frac{1}{1 + \frac{8}{m+1)^2\pi^2} \right) \to \frac{2}{\pi} \arctan \left( \frac{2\pi}{(m+1)^2\pi^2 + 8} \right) =: r_m.
\]
Finally, for (3.27), simplifying the second line of the definition of \( \psi_{nm,1}(t) \),

\[
|\psi_{nm,1}(t)| = \left| \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right) \right] \right\} \right|
\]

\[
= \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left| 1 - \frac{it}{k} + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right| \right\}
\]

\[
= \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \sqrt{1 - \frac{t^2}{nk} + \frac{t^4}{4nk^2}} \right\}
\]

\[
\leq \exp \left\{ - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 + \frac{8t^2 n - k}{\pi^2 nk^2} \right) \right\}.
\]

The artificial factor \( 8/\pi^2 < 1 \) was sneaked in just to get the exact same upper bound as in (3.32) for \( |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| \), and hence to conclude without any extra work that

\[
|\psi_{nm,1}(t)| \leq d_{nm} |t|^{m+1} e^{-r_{nm}|t|}, \quad 1 \leq |t| < n,
\]

(3.34)

for \( n > 2(m+1) \), as in (3.33), with the same \( d_{nm} \to d_m \) and \( r_{nm} \to r_m > 0 \).

Now, recalling the definition of \( R_{nm,1} = I_{nm,1}^{1,1} + I_{nm,1}^{1,2} \) in (3.25), suppose that \( n > \max\{2(m+1),1/c\} \). Since \( |\varphi_{nm}(t)| \leq 1 \) and \( |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| \leq 1 \), the inequalities (3.27) and (3.31) yield \( I_{nm,1}^{1,1} \leq 2(\log n)/(3n^2) \). For the other term (3.27), (3.31), (3.33), (3.34), and the fact that the functions involved are even, imply that

\[
I_{nm,1}^{1,2} \leq \frac{2 \log n}{n^2} d_{nm} \int_1^{\infty} t^{m+3} e^{-r_{nm}t} dt,
\]

so that the case \( j = 1 \) in (3.25) holds true; in fact, \( R_{nm,1} = O((\log n)/n^2) \).

The case of \( R_{nm,2} \). By (3.20) and the formulae between (3.22) and (3.24),

\[
|\rho_{nm,2}(t)| = |\psi_{nm,1}(t) - \psi_{nm,2}(t)|
\]

\[
= \left| \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right) \right] \right\} - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right) \right|
\]

\[
- \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} + \frac{(it)^2}{2nk} \right) + \frac{t^2}{2nk} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right] \right\}.
\]

The inequality (3.26) now gives

\[
|\rho_{nm,2}(t)| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left\{ |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| + |\psi_{nm,2}(t)| \right\} \delta_{nm}^{[2]}(t),
\]

(3.35)
as an analogue of (3.27), where

\[
\delta_{nm}^{[2]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 + \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} \right) - \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right|
\]

\[
= \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left| \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{(-1)^{j-1}}{j} \left( \frac{(it)^2}{2n(k - it)} \right)^j \right) - \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it} \right|
\]

\[
\leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \left( \frac{(-1)^{j-1}}{j} \right) \left( \frac{(it)^2}{2n(k - it)} \right)^j - \frac{(it)^2}{2n} \frac{1}{k - it}
\]

\[
\leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{t^2}{2n\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}} \right)^2 \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \left( \frac{t^2}{2n\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}} \right)^{j-2}.
\]

Since \(|t| < n\), we find that \(t^2/(2n\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}) < n^2/(2n\sqrt{k^2 + n^2}) < 1/2\), and so

\[
\delta_{nm}^{[2]}(t) \leq \frac{\pi^2}{24} \frac{t^4}{n^2}.
\]  

Next, recalling the notation for \(A_{nm}(t)\) from (3.22), we write

\[
|\psi_{nm,2}(t)| = |A_{nm}(t)| |B_{nm}(t)| \quad \text{with} \quad B_{nm}(t) = \exp \left\{ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right\},
\]  

and estimate the two factors separately. First,

\[
|A_{nm}(t)| = \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left| 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right| \right\} = \exp \left\{ - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{k^2} \right) \right\}
\]

\[
\leq \exp \left\{ - \frac{1}{2} \int_{m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{y^2} \right) \, dy \right\},
\]

where the inequality holds again because the terms of the last sum decrease as \(k\) increases. Substituting \(x = t^2/y^2\), so that \(y = |t|/\sqrt{x}\), we obtain

\[
|A_{nm}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ - \frac{|t|}{4} \int_{(\frac{t}{n})^2}^{(\frac{t}{(m+1)n})^2} \frac{\log(1 + x)}{x^{3/2}} \, dx \right\}
\]

\[
= \exp \left\{ - \frac{|t|}{4} \left[ -2 \log(1 + x) \right]_{x=(\frac{t}{(m+1)n})^2}^{x=(\frac{t}{n})^2} - \frac{|t|}{2} \int_{(\frac{t}{n})^2}^{(\frac{t}{(m+1)n})^2} \frac{1}{\sqrt{x} (1 + x)} \, dx \right\}
\]

\[
= \frac{\left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{(m+1)^2} \right)^{\frac{m+1}{2}}}{\left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{n^2} \right)^{\frac{m+1}{2}}} \exp \left\{ - |t| \arctan \left( \frac{1 - \frac{1}{n}}{1 + \frac{t^2}{(m+1)n}} \right) \right\},
\]

33
whence

\[ |A_{nm}(t)| \leq |t|^{m+1} \left( \frac{\frac{1}{t^2} + \frac{1}{(m+1)^2}}{1 + \frac{t^2}{n^2}} \right)^{(m+1)/2} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{|t|(n-m-1)}{t^2 + (m+1)n} \right\}. \]

If \(|t| \geq 1\), then

\[ |A_{nm}(t)| \leq a_{nm} |t|^{m+1} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{|t|(n-m-1)}{t^2 + (m+1)n} \right\}, \quad (3.38) \]

where

\[ a_{nm} = \left( \frac{\frac{1}{t^2} + \frac{1}{(m+1)^2}}{1 + \frac{t^2}{n^2}} \right)^{(m+1)/2} \to \left( 1 + \frac{1}{(m+1)^2} \right)^{m+1} =: a_m, \]

and the arctan expression in the exponent, as a function of \(|t|\), is monotone increasing on \((0, \sqrt{(m+1)n})\) and monotone decreasing on \((\sqrt{(m+1)n}, n)\) because

\[ \frac{d}{ds} \left( \frac{s(n-m-1)}{s^2 + (m+1)n} \right) = \frac{(n-m-1)(n(m+1) - s^2)}{(s^2 + (m+1)n)^2}. \]

Then it follows that

\[ \frac{|A_{nm}(t)|}{a_{nm}} \leq \begin{cases} |t|^{m+1} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{n-m-1}{1+(m+1)n} \right\}, & \text{if } t \in [1, \sqrt{(m+1)n}); \\ |t|^{m+1} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{n-m-1}{n+m+1} \right\}, & \text{if } t \in (\sqrt{(m+1)n}, n). \end{cases} \quad (3.39) \]

Next we deal with the other factor in (3.37), for which

\[ |B_{nm}(t)| = \exp \left\{ \Re \left( \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k-it} \right) \right\} = \exp \left\{ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{k}{k^2 + t^2} \right\} \]

\[ \leq \exp \left\{ \frac{3}{2} \frac{t^2 \log n}{n} \right\}, \quad \text{whenever } |t| < n, \quad (3.40) \]

by (3.17). This will be good enough for small \(|t|\), and for moderate \(|t|\) it may be written as

\[ |B_{nm}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ \frac{3\sqrt{m+1}}{2} |t| \frac{\log n}{\sqrt{n}} \right\}, \quad \text{if } |t| \leq \sqrt{(m+1)n}. \quad (3.41) \]

To obtain yet a third bound, useful for large \(|t|\), note that \(d\{y/(y^2 + t^2)\}/dy = (t^2 - y^2)/(y^2 + t^2)^2\). The behavior of this derivative shows that for \(|t| \leq m+1\) the terms of the sum in the formula of \(|B_{nm}(t)|\) decrease as \(k\) increases, while for \(m+1 < |t| \leq n\) the terms increase until \(k\) reaches \(|t|\) and decrease afterward. Hence

\[ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{k}{k^2 + t^2} \leq \int_{m}^{n} \frac{y}{y^2 + t^2} dy + \frac{|t|}{|t|^2 + t^2} = \log \sqrt{\frac{n^2 + t^2}{m^2 + t^2}} + \frac{|t|}{|t|^2 + t^2} \]

\[ < \log \sqrt{\frac{2n^2}{t^2}} + \frac{|t|}{\frac{t^2}{2} + t^2} < \sqrt{2} n + \frac{2}{3|t|} = \frac{3\sqrt{2} n + 2}{3|t|}, \]

34
where, by elementary considerations concerning integer parts, the second inequality holds provided \( \sqrt{2}/(\sqrt{2} - 1) \leq |t| < n \). Thus, substituting this bound into (3.40),

\[
|B_{nm}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ |t| \frac{3\sqrt{2}n + 2}{6n} \right\}, \quad \text{if} \quad \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\sqrt{2} - 1} \leq |t| < n. \tag{3.42}
\]

Introduce now the sets 
\[
S_{nm} = [-\sqrt{(m+1)n}, -1) \cup (1, \sqrt{(m+1)n}) \quad \text{and} \quad T_{nm} = [-cn, -\sqrt{(m+1)n}) \cup (\sqrt{(m+1)n}, cn], \nonumber
\]
so that \( H_{nc} = [-cn, -1) \cup (1, cn] = S_{nm} \cup T_{nm} \), and in the second term of \( R_{nm,2} = I_{nm,2}^{1} + I_{nm,2}^{2} \) in (3.25). Since \( |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| \leq 1 \) and \( |A_{nm}(t)| \leq 1 \), (3.35), (3.36) and (3.37), combined with (3.40), give

\[
I_{nm,2}^{1} \leq \frac{\pi^2}{48} \frac{1}{n^2} \int_{-1}^{1} |t|^3 \left[ 1 + \exp \left\{ \frac{3}{2} \frac{t^2 \log n}{n} \right\} \right] dt \leq \frac{\pi^2}{96} \frac{1 + \exp \left\{ \frac{3}{2} \frac{\log n}{n} \right\}}{n^2} = O\left( \frac{1}{n^2} \right),
\]

while by (3.35) and (3.36) only, dropping the factor \( \pi^2/48 \leq 1 \) for simplicity,

\[
I_{nm,2}^{2} \leq \frac{1}{n^2} \int_{H_{nc}} |t|^3 |\psi_{nm,1}(t)| dt + \frac{1}{n^2} \int_{S_{nm}} |t|^3 |\psi_{nm,2}(t)| dt + \frac{1}{n^2} \int_{T_{nm}} |t|^3 |\psi_{nm,2}(t)| dt
\]

\[
= I_{nm,2}^{2,1} + I_{nm,2}^{2,2} + I_{nm,2}^{2,3}.
\]

Here \( I_{nm,2}^{2,1} = O(1/n^2) \) by (3.34). Also, by (3.37), (3.39) and (3.41),

\[
I_{nm,2}^{2,2} \leq \frac{2}{n^2} \int_{1}^{\sqrt{(m+1)n}} t^3 |\psi_{nm,2}(t)| dt \leq \frac{2a_{nm}}{n^2} \int_{1}^{\sqrt{(m+1)n}} t^{m+4} e^{-b_{nm}t} dt,
\]

where \( a_{nm} \to a_m \) and

\[
b_{nm} := \arctan \frac{n - m - 1}{1 + (m+1)n} - \frac{\sqrt{m+1} \log n}{2\sqrt{n}} \to \arctan \frac{1}{m+1} > 0,
\]

so that \( I_{nm,2}^{2,2} = O(1/n^2) \) as well. Finally, by (3.37), (3.39) and (3.42),

\[
I_{nm,2}^{2,3} \leq \frac{2}{n^2} \int_{\sqrt{(m+1)n}}^{cn} t^3 |\psi_{nm,2}(t)| dt \leq \frac{2a_{nm}}{n^2} \int_{\sqrt{(m+1)n}}^{n} t^{m+4} e^{-c_{nm}t} dt
\]

with the same \( a_{nm} \), where

\[
c_{nm} := \arctan \frac{n - m - 1}{n + m + 1} - \frac{3\sqrt{2}n + 2}{6n} \to \frac{\pi}{4} - \frac{\sqrt{2}}{2} > 0.078.
\]

Thus \( I_{nm,2}^{2,3} = o(1/n^2) \). So, the case \( j = 2 \) of (3.25) holds; in fact \( R_{nm,2} = O(1/n^2) \).

The case of \( R_{nm,3} \). Recalling (3.20) and the formulae after (3.22), we have \( |\rho_{nm,3}(t)| = |\psi_{nm,2}(t) - \psi_{nm,3}(t)| = |A_{nm}(t)| |C_{nm}(t)| \) where \( A_{nm}(t) \) is given in (3.22), and already occurs also in (3.37), and

\[
C_{nm}(t) = \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k-it} \right]^l.
\]
Clearly, \( C_{nm}(0) = 0 \), and for \( t \neq 0 \),

\[
|C_{nm}(t)| \leq \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k-it} \right]^l = \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}} \right]^l \\
\leq \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \int_0^n \frac{1}{\sqrt{y^2 + t^2}} \, dy \right]^l = \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \int_0^{n/|t|} \frac{1}{\sqrt{x^2 + 1}} \, dx \right]^l \\
= \sum_{l=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{l!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{|t|} \right) \right]^l = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j!} \left[ \frac{t^2}{2n} \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{|t|} \right) \right]^j,
\]

where, for momentary gain of space, \( \text{rsh}(x) := \text{arcsinh}(x) = \log\left(x + \sqrt{x^2 + 1}\right) \) is the reverse (inverse) to the hyperbolic function \( \sinh(x) = (e^x - e^{-x})/2 \), \( x \in \mathbb{R} \). Thus,

\[
|\rho_{nm,3}(t)| \leq |A_{nm}(t)| \frac{t^4}{4n^2} \text{rsh}^2\left( \frac{n}{|t|} \right) \exp\left\{ \frac{t^2}{2n} \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{|t|} \right) \right\}.
\]

(3.43)

Now we can estimate \( R_{nm,3} = I_{nm}^{3,1} + I_{nm}^{3,2} \) in (3.25).

Concerning the first term, notice first that for the derivatives of the functions \( v_n(s) = s^3 \text{rsh}^2(n/s) \) and \( w_n(s) = s^2 \text{rsh}(n/s)/(2n) \), for \( s \in (0,1] \), we have

\[
v_n'(s) = s^2 \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{s} \right) \left[ 3 \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{s} \right) - \frac{2n}{\sqrt{s^2 + n^2}} \right] \geq s^2 \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{s} \right) [3 \text{rsh}(1) - 2]
\]

which is positive since \( 3 \text{rsh}(1) - 2 > 0.64 \), and

\[
w_n'(s) = \frac{s}{2n} \left[ 2 \text{rsh}\left( \frac{n}{s} \right) - \frac{n}{\sqrt{s^2 + n^2}} \right] \geq \frac{s}{2n} [2 \text{rsh}(1) - 1] > \frac{s}{2n} \frac{76}{100} > 0,
\]

so both \( v_n(\cdot) \) and \( \exp\{w_n(\cdot)\} \) are monotone increasing on the interval \( (0,1) \). Hence, using (3.18), the fact that \( |A_{nm}(t)| \leq 1 \) and the evenness of the functions involved, we can bound the integrand by its value at 1 to obtain

\[
I_{nm}^{3,1} \leq \frac{1}{2n^2} \int_0^1 v_n(s) e^{w_n(s)} \, ds \leq \frac{e^{\text{arcsinh}(n)/(2n)}}{2} \frac{\text{arcsinh}^2(n)}{n}.
\]

The asymptotic equality \( \text{arcsinh}(n) \sim \log n \) then shows that \( I_{nm}^{3,1} = O(\log(n)^2/n^2) \).

For \( I_{nm}^{3,2} \), using (3.43), (3.38) with the \( a_{nm} \rightarrow a_m \) given there, the evenness of the integrand and the fact that the function \( t \rightarrow \text{arcsinh}(n/t) \) is decreasing, we get

\[
I_{nm}^{3,2} \leq \frac{a_{nm}}{2} \frac{\text{arcsinh}^2(n)}{n^2} \int_1^n t^{m+1} e^{-t g_{nm}(t)} \, dt,
\]

(4.44)

where, with \( t \in [1,n) \) everywhere in what remains of the present case \( j = 3 \) of (3.25),

\[
g_{nm}(t) = \arctan \left( \frac{tn-m-1}{t^2 + n(m+1)} - \frac{t}{2n} \text{arcsinh} \left( \frac{n}{t} \right) \right).
\]
Here
\[ g'_{nm}(t) = \frac{(n - m - 1) [n(m + 1) - t^2]}{[n(m + 1) + t^2]^2 + t^2(n - m - 1)^2} - \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\arcsinh(n/t)}{n} - \frac{1}{\sqrt{t^2 + n^2}} \right). \]

The first term of this expression is positive if \( t < \sqrt{n(m + 1)} \) and negative if \( t > \sqrt{n(m + 1)} \), while the second term is negative for all \( t \in (0, n) \), since this term takes on a negative value at \( t = n \) and is an increasing function of \( t \) on this interval:
\[ -\frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{\arcsinh(n/t)}{n} - \frac{1}{\sqrt{t^2 + n^2}} \right)' = \frac{n^2}{2t(t^2 + n^2)^{3/2}} > 0, \quad \text{if} \quad 0 < t < n. \]

In particular, \( g_{nm}(\cdot) \) is a decreasing function on the interval \((\sqrt{n(m + 1)}, n)\), and hence \( g_{nm}(t) \geq g_{nm}(n) \) for all \( t \in (\sqrt{n(m + 1)}, n) \), where this value is
\[ g_{nm}(n) = \arctan \frac{n - m - 1}{n + m + 1} - \frac{\arcsinh(1)}{2} \rightarrow \arctan(1) - \frac{\arcsinh(1)}{2} > 0.34. \]

Therefore, for all \( n \) sufficiently large,
\[ \int_{\sqrt{n(m+1)}}^{n} t^{m+4} e^{-tg_{nm}(t)} \, dt \leq \int_{\sqrt{n(m+1)}}^{n} t^{m+4} e^{-(0.3)t} \, dt = o(1). \tag{3.45} \]

For \( t \in [1, \sqrt{n(m + 1)}) \) we replace the leading \( t \) of the second term in \( g_{nm}(t) \) by \( \sqrt{n(m + 1)} \), and then notice that the resulting lower bound is an increasing function of \( t \) on the interval \([1, \sqrt{n(m + 1)})\). This way we obtain
\[ g_{nm}(t) \geq \arctan \frac{t(n - m - 1)}{t^2 + n(m + 1)} - \frac{\sqrt{m + 1}}{2} \frac{\arcsinh \left( \frac{n}{t} \right)}{\sqrt{n}} \]
\[ \geq \arctan \frac{n - m - 1}{1 + n(m + 1)} - \frac{\sqrt{m + 1}}{2} \frac{\arcsinh(n)}{\sqrt{n}}, \]
and this converges to \( \arctan(1/(m + 1)) > 0 \). Hence for all \( n \) large enough,
\[ \int_{1}^{\sqrt{n(m+1)}} t^{m+4} e^{-tg_{nm}(t)} \, dt \leq \int_{1}^{\sqrt{n(m+1)}} t^{m+4} e^{-\left(\frac{1}{2} \arctan \frac{n}{t}\right)t} \, dt. \tag{3.46} \]

Now (3.46), (3.45) and (3.44) together give \( I_{nm}^{3,2} = O((\log n)^2/n^2) \) again. Thus \( R_{nm,3} = O((\log n)^2/n^2) \) as well, and so the case \( j = 3 \) in (3.25) is amply satisfied.

The case of \( R_{nm,4} \). Using (3.20)–(3.22) and the formulae above (3.24), we see that
\[ |\rho_{nm,4}(t)| = |\psi_{nm,3}(t) - \psi_{nm,4}(t)| = |D_{nm}(t)||\varphi(t) - A_{nm}(t)|, \]
where
\[ |D_{nm}(t)| = \left| 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{k - it} \right| \leq 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{\sqrt{k^2 + t^2}} \]
\[ \leq 1 + \frac{t^2}{2n} \sum_{k=1}^{2n} \frac{1}{|t|} = 1 + |t| \leq \begin{cases} 2, & \text{if } |t| \leq 1; \\ 2|t|, & \text{if } |t| > 1. \end{cases} \tag{3.47} \]
With this factor done, inequality (3.26) gives another analogue of (3.27), namely
\[
|\rho_{nm,4}(t)| \leq \frac{|D_{nm}(t)|}{2} \left\{ |\varphi_m(t)| + |A_{nm}(t)| \right\} \delta_{nm}^{[4]}(t),
\]
where, since the assumption $|t| \leq cn$ for some $c \in (0, 1)$ ensures that the logarithms can be expanded for all $k = n, n + 1, \ldots$, as noted at (3.23),
\[
\delta_{nm}^{[4]}(t) = \sum_{k=n}^{\infty} \left( -\frac{it}{k} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right) \leq \sum_{k=n}^{\infty} \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \frac{|t|^j}{k^j} \leq \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{|t|^j}{j} \int_{n-1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{y^j} dy
\]
\[
= \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{|t|^j}{j(j-1)} \frac{1}{n^j} \frac{n^{j-1}}{(n-1)^{j-1}} \leq t^2 \frac{n}{n-1} \left[ \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{6} \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \left( \frac{|t|}{n(n-1)} \right)^{j-2} \right].
\]
Let $n$ be large enough to make $n/(n-1) < (1+c)/(2c)$, where $c$ is as above. Then
\[
\frac{|t|}{n(n-1)} < c \frac{1+c}{2c} = \frac{1+c}{2} < 1,
\]
and so
\[
\sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \left( \frac{|t|}{n(n-1)} \right)^{j-2} \leq \frac{1}{1 - \frac{1+c}{2}} - 1 = \frac{1+c}{1-c}.
\]
Hence, for all $n$ large enough,
\[
\delta_{nm}^{[4]}(t) \leq t^2 \frac{n}{2c} \left[ \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1+c}{6} - c(1-c) \right].
\]
\[
\text{(3.49)}
\]
Next, by classical results on the $\Gamma$ function ([22], §8, for example) we see that
\[
|\varphi_m(t)| = \left| \prod_{k=1}^{m} e^{it/k} \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right| = \left| \prod_{k=1}^{m} e^{-it/k} e^{-it/k} \prod_{k=1}^{m} e^{it/k} \left( 1 - \frac{it}{k} \right) \right|
\]
\[
= |\Gamma(1-it)| \sqrt{\prod_{k=1}^{m} \left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{k^2} \right)} = \sqrt{\frac{2\pi|t|}{\sqrt{1-e^{-2\pi|t|}}}} e^{-\frac{t^2}{2}} \sqrt{\prod_{k=1}^{m} \left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{k^2} \right)},
\]
starting from (3.21), which implies
\[
|\varphi_m(t)| \leq \frac{\sqrt{2\pi}}{\sqrt{1-e^{-2\pi|t|}}} \sqrt{|t|(1+t^2)^m} e^{-\pi|t|/2}, \quad \text{whenever} \quad |t| \in [1, \infty).
\]
\[
\text{(3.50)}
\]
Also, since $(m+1)n + 1 \geq n + m + 1$, combining the two cases in (3.39) we have
\[
|A_{nm}(t)| \leq a_{nm} |t|^{m+1} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{n-m-1}{1+(m+1)n} \right\}, \quad \text{if} \quad |t| \in [1, cn],
\]
\[
\text{(3.51)}
\]
and we are ready to deal with $R_{nm,4} = I_{nm}^{4,1} + I_{nm}^{4,2}$ in (3.25).

The inequalities $|\varphi_m(t)| \leq 1$ and $|A_{nm}(t)| \leq 1$ and (3.47)–(3.49) imply
\[
I_{nm}^{4,1} \leq \frac{1}{n} \frac{2(1+c)^2}{c(1-c)} \int_{-1}^{1} |t| dt = \frac{2(1+c)^2}{c(1-c)} \frac{1}{n},
\]
38
for all \( n \) large enough. Also, collecting the five bounds from (3.47)–(3.51), for all sufficiently large \( n \) we obtain

\[
I_{mn}^{1,2} \leq \frac{a_{nm}}{n} \frac{2(1 + c)^2}{c(1 - c)} \int_1^\infty t^{m+3} \exp \left\{ -|t| \arctan \frac{n - m - 1}{1 + (m + 1)n} \right\} \, dt
\]

\[
+ \frac{1}{n} \frac{2(1 + c)^2 \sqrt{2\pi}}{c(1 - c) \sqrt{1 - e^{-\pi^2 n}}} \int_1^\infty t^{5/2} (1 + t^2)^{m/2} e^{-\pi t/2} \, dt.
\]

Since \( a_{nm} \to a_m \) and \( \arctan((n - m - 1)/(1 + (m + 1)n)) \to \arctan(1/(m + 1)) > 0 \), we conclude that \( I_{mn}^{1,2} = O(1/n) \). Therefore, \( R_{nm,4} = O(1/n) \), establishing the case \( j = 4 \) of (3.25) and thus completing the proof of (3.7) in the theorem.

**Proof of (3.10).** Let \( E_n = \sum_{k=1}^n \frac{1}{k} - \log n - \gamma \), for which, by a classical asymptotic expansion due to Euler,

\[
E_n = \frac{1}{2n} - \frac{1}{12n^2} + \frac{\theta_n}{120n^4} \quad \text{for some } \theta_n \in (0, 1).
\]

Using the forms of the three ingredients given before the statement of the theorem, for the deviation \( \Delta_n^* := \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{nm}^*(x) - [F_n^*(x) + G_{n,m}^*(x)] \right| \) in question we obtain

\[
\Delta_n^* = \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{nm}(x - C_m - E_n) - F_m(x - C_m) - G_{n,m}(x - C_m - E_n) \right|
\]

\[
= \sup_{y \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{nm}(y) - F_m(y + E_n) - G_{n,m}(y) \right|
\]

\[
\leq \sup_{y \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{nm}(y) - [F_m(y) + G_{n,m}(y)] \right| + \sup_{y \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_m(y) - F_m(y + E_n) \right|.
\]

Hence (3.7) and the inequality, obtained by the mean value theorem,

\[
\sup_{y \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_m(y) - F_m(y + E_n) \right| \leq |E_n| \max_{y \in \mathbb{R}} f_m(y) = O \left( \frac{1}{n} \right)
\]

yield the desired statement in (3.10). Also, the functions \( G_{n,m}^*(x) := G_{n,m}(x - C_m) \) clearly inherit the stated order properties of \( G_{n,m}(x) \), \( x \in \mathbb{R} \), since the shift \( C_m \) is constant. Then so do the functions \( G_{n,m}^*(x) = G_{n,m}^*(x - E_n) \), \( x \in \mathbb{R} \), because

\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| G_{n,m}^*(x) - G_{n,m}^*(x) \right| \leq |E_n| \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| G_{n,m}(x) \right| = O \left( \frac{\log n}{n^2} \right),
\]

where the last bound is due to the inequality in (3.19). \( \blacksquare \)
Chapter 4

Normal approximation

In this chapter we prove an error bound for normal approximation to the coupon collector’s standardized waiting time. We introduce the distribution functions

\[ F_{n,m}(x) := \mathbb{P}\left( \frac{W_{n,m} - \mu_n}{\sigma_n} \leq x \right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \]

As mentioned in the Introduction, Baum and Billingsley [8] showed that if the \( m \) goes to infinity along with \( n \), but slowly enough to let the sequence \( (n - m)/\sqrt{n} \) tend to infinity as-well, then the standardized \( W_{n,m} \) is asymptotically normal:

\[ \lim_{n \to \infty} F_{n,m}(x) = \Phi(x), \quad \text{where} \quad \Phi(x) := \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{x} e^{-s^2/2} ds, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}. \]

The following theorem gives a bound for the rate of convergence in this central limit theorem.

**Theorem 4.0.1** *For all* \( n \geq 3 \) *and* \( 1 \leq m \leq n - 2 \), *we have*

\[ \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{n,m}(x) - \Phi(x) \right| \leq C \frac{n}{m} \frac{1}{\sigma_n}, \quad (4.1) \]

*where* \( C = 9.257 \).

One can check that the bound given by Theorem 4.0.1 goes to 0 iff \( m \) goes to infinity along with \( n \), but slowly enough to let the sequence \( (n - m)/\sqrt{n} \) tend to infinity as-well, which is in accord with the central limit theorem stated above. Indeed, this follows easily from the asymptotic formulae for \( \sigma_n^2 \), given by Baum and Billingsley [8]:

- If \( \frac{m}{n} \to d \) for some \( d \in (0,1) \), so that \( \frac{n-m}{n} \to 1 - d \), then \( \sigma_n^2 \sim n^{1-d+d\log d} \).
- If \( \frac{m}{n} \to 1 \), so that \( \frac{n-m}{n} \to 0 \), and \( \frac{(n-m)^2}{n} \to \infty \), then \( \sigma_n^2 \sim \frac{1}{2} \frac{(n-m)^2}{n} \).
- If \( \frac{m}{n} \to 0 \), so that \( \frac{n-m}{n} \to 1 \), and \( m \to \infty \), then \( \sigma_n^2 \sim \frac{n^2}{m} \).

These asymptotic relations then give the following typical examples:

- If \( m \sim dn \) for some \( 0 < d < 1 \), then \( \frac{m}{n} \sigma_n \sim \text{constant} \cdot \sqrt{n} \).
If \( m \sim n - n^\alpha \) for some \( \frac{1}{2} < \alpha < 1 \), then \( \frac{m}{n} \sigma_n \sim \text{constant} \cdot n^{\alpha - \frac{1}{2}} \).

If \( m \sim n^\beta \) for some \( 0 < \beta < 1 \), then \( \frac{m}{n} \sigma_n \sim \text{constant} \cdot n^{\beta/2} \).

If \( m \sim \log n \), then \( \frac{m}{n} \sigma_n \sim \text{constant} \cdot \sqrt{\log n} \).

**Proof.** We estimate the supremum distance between the distribution function \( F_{n,m} \) and the limiting distribution function \( \Phi \) in terms of their characteristic functions, using Esseen’s smoothing inequality. Since the characteristic function of the geometric distribution with success probability \( p \in (0, 1) \) is \( p e^{it}/(1 - q e^{it}) \), where \( i \) is the imaginary unit and \( q = 1 - p \), by (1.1) we have

\[
\phi_{n,m}(t) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ixt} dF_{n,m}(x) = \mathbb{E}\left( \exp\left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} \left[ W_{n,m} - n \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{k} \right] \right) \right) = \prod_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{k e^{it/\sigma_n} e^{-itn/k\sigma_n}}{1 - n^{-k} e^{it/\sigma_n}},
\]

while the limiting characteristic function is \( \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ixt} d\Phi(x) = e^{-t^2/2}, t \in \mathbb{R} \). Choosing the main parameter in Esseen’s inequality (see Section 2.2.) to be \( c_n \sigma_n \), where, with any fixed \( c \in (0, 1) \), the sequence \( c_n(m) = c_n \) is given by

\[
c_n(m) := \min\left\{ 1, \frac{c(m + 1)}{\sqrt{n(n-m-1)}} \right\}, \tag{4.2}
\]

the inequality in the case of our distribution functions takes on the following form:

\[
\sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{n,m}(x) - \Phi(x) \right| \leq \frac{b}{2\pi} \int_{-c_n \sigma_n}^{c_n \sigma_n} \frac{\left| \phi_{n,m}(t) - e^{-t^2/2} \right|}{t} dt + \frac{c_b}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \frac{1}{c_n \sigma_n}, \tag{4.3}
\]

where \( b > 1 \) is arbitrary and \( c_b \) is a positive constant depending only on \( b \).

Since we restricted the domain of the characteristic functions to \( (-c_n \sigma_n, c_n \sigma_n) \), from now on we assume that this interval is the domain of all formulae containing the variable \( t \). We emphasize that by the definition of \( c_n \) in (4.2) this means that, on the one hand, \( |t| < \sigma_n \), and, on the other hand, for any \( c \in (0, 1) \) chosen in \( c_n \) and \( k \in \{m+1, \ldots, n-1\} \),

\[
|t| < \frac{c(m + 1)}{\sqrt{n(n-m-1)}} \sigma_n \leq \frac{ck}{\sqrt{n(n-k)}} \sigma_n < \frac{k}{\sqrt{n(n-k)}} \sigma_n. \tag{4.4}
\]
We estimate the deviation $|\varphi_{n,m}(t) - e^{-t^2/2}|$ in the integrand on the right-hand side of the inequality in (4.3) through the following heuristic steps:

$$\varphi_{n,m}(t) = \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{it/\sigma_n} \right) \right] \right\}$$

$$\approx \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} \left( 1 + \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right) \right] \right\}$$

$$= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} - \log \left( 1 - n - k \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right) \right] \right\} =: \varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)$$

$$\approx \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \frac{n-k}{k} \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) + \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^2 \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right)^2 \right] \right\}$$

$$= \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{4\sigma_n^2} \right) \right\} =: \varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)$$

$$\approx \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} .$$

At each approximation a certain function was replaced with the first few terms of its series expansion. At the second one this was done with a logarithmic expression, whose expansion about 1 exists, because for an arbitrary term of the sum in $\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(\cdot)$, that is, for an arbitrary $k \in \{m+1, \ldots, n-1\}$,

$$\frac{n-k}{k} \left| \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right| = \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{|t|}{\sigma_n} \sqrt{1 + \frac{t^2}{4\sigma_n^2}} < \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{c \sigma_n}{\sqrt{n(n-k)}} \sqrt{1 + \frac{k^2}{4n(n-k)}}$$

by (4.4), which gives

$$\frac{n-k}{k} \left| \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right| < c \frac{2n-k}{2n} \leq c < 1. \quad (4.5)$$

Now, the errors resulting from the first two of our three approximations can be estimated applying the following inequality

$$|e^{z_1} - e^{z_2}| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( |e^{z_1}| + |e^{z_2}| \right) |z_1 - z_2|$$

for arbitrary complex numbers $z_1$ and $z_2$. This yields

$$|\varphi_{n,m}(t) - \varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( |\varphi_{n,m}(t)| + |\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)| \right) \delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t), \quad (4.6)$$

where

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{it/\sigma_n} \right) - \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} \left( 1 + \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right) \right] \right|.$$
and
\[
|\varphi_{n,m}(t) - \varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left( |\varphi_{n,m}(t)| + |\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)| \right) \delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t),
\] (4.7)
where
\[
\delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{k} \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right) 
+ \frac{n-k}{k} \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) + \frac{1}{2} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right)^2 \right] \right|
\]
\[
= \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{-1}{j} \frac{(n-k)}{k} \left( \frac{it}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right)^j \right|.
\]

Summarizing, for the estimation of the integral
\[
I_{n,m} := \int_{-c_n\sigma_n}^{c_n\sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}(t) - e^{-t^2/2}}{t} \right| dt
\]
in (4.3), we use the intermediate approximative functions \(\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(\cdot)\) and \(\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(\cdot)\), and the inequalities above concerning their differences, obtaining have
\[
I_{n,m} \leq \frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n\sigma_n}^{c_n\sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}(t) - \varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) dt + \frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n\sigma_n}^{c_n\sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) dt
\]+\frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n\sigma_n}^{c_n\sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}(t) - \varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) dt + \frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n\sigma_n}^{c_n\sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) dt
\] (4.8)

Now we give upper bounds for each of the functions occurring in the integrals above.

First we consider \(|\varphi_{n,m}(t)|\). By simple computation
\[
|\varphi_{n,m}(t)| = \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n-k}{k} \frac{it}{\sigma_n} + \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{it/\sigma_n} \right) \right] \right\}
\]
\[
= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{it/\sigma_n} \right) \right] \right\}
\]
\[
= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( 1 + \frac{(n-k)^2}{n^2} - \frac{2(n-k)}{n} \cos \frac{t}{\sigma_n} \right) \right] \right\}
\]
\[
= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \frac{k}{n} - \log \left( \frac{k}{n} \frac{2}{n} - \frac{2(n-k)}{n} \cos \frac{t}{\sigma_n} \right) \right] \right\}
\]
\[
= \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \log \left( 1 + \frac{2(n-k)}{k^2} \left( 1 - \cos \frac{t}{\sigma_n} \right) \right) \right] \right\}.
\]
Since $t/\sigma_n < 1 < \pi/2$, we can continue with applying the inequality $1 - \cos x \geq \frac{4}{\pi} x^2$, true for $x \in (0, \pi/2)$, and obtain

$$|\varphi_{n,m}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{8}{\pi^2} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \right) \right\}.$$  

Now we see from (4.4) that we can use the inequality

$$\log(1 + x) \geq x - \frac{x^2}{2}, \text{ if } x \in (0, 1),$$

which yields

$$|\varphi_{n,m}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \left( \frac{8}{\pi^2} - \frac{32}{\pi^4} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \right) \right] \right\}.$$  

Using once again the bound in (4.4), on the second $t^2$ in the expression above, and recalling (1.3), we easily get

$$|\varphi_{n,m}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{20}{\pi^4} t^2 \right\}. \quad (4.10)$$

Next, in a completely analogous way,

$$|\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)| = \left| \exp \left\{ \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \left( 1 - \frac{k^2}{\sigma_n^2} \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right] \right\} \right|$$

$$= \exp \left\{ -\sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left| 1 - \frac{n-k}{k} \left( \frac{k^2}{\sigma_n^2} \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) \right| \right\}$$

$$= \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} + \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \frac{t^4}{4\sigma_n^4} \right) \right\}$$

$$\leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( 1 + \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \right) \right\}.$$  

Again, (4.4) allows us to use the inequality in (4.9) to obtain

$$|\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \left( 1 - \frac{n(n-k)}{2k^2} \frac{t^2}{\sigma_n^2} \right) \right] \right\},$$

and now, another application of (4.4), and recognizing (1.3), yields

$$|\varphi_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{4} \right\}. \quad (4.11)$$
Also, by elementary considerations and (1.3) again,

\[
|\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)| = \left| \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left( -\frac{\imath t^3}{\sigma_n^3} + \frac{t^4}{4\sigma_n^4} \right) \right\} \right|
\]

\[
= \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4} \right\}
\]

\[
\leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4} \right\} = \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4} \right\}
\]

\[
\leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{t^2}{2} \right\} \exp \left\{ \frac{t^2}{8} \right\}.
\]

where the last inequality follows from the assumption that \(|t| < \sigma_n\). Therefore

\[
|\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ \frac{3t^2}{8} \right\}. \quad (4.12)
\]

Next, we see for \(\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t)\) in (4.6) that

\[
\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log \left( \frac{1 - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{\imath t/\sigma_n}}{1 - \frac{n-k}{n} \left( 1 + \frac{\imath t}{\sigma_n} - \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \right) - \frac{n-k}{n} e^{\imath t/\sigma_n} \right) \right| = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \log(1 + z_{n,k}(t)) \right|.
\]

Since \(|e^{\imath u} - (1 + \imath u - \frac{u^2}{2})| \leq \frac{|u|^3}{6} \) for all \(u \in \mathbb{R}\) and \(|t| < \sigma_n\),

\[
|z_{n,k}(t)| \leq \frac{|t|^3}{6\sigma_n^3} \leq \frac{|u|^3}{6\sigma_n^3} \leq \frac{1}{3} \frac{t^3}{2\sigma_n^3} \leq \frac{t^3}{3\sigma_n^3} \leq \frac{1}{3} < 1,
\]

the logarithmic expression can be expanded, so that

\[
\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) = \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^j z_{n,k}^{(j)}(t)}{j} \right| \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \frac{|z_{n,k}(t)|^j}{j} \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ z_{n,k}(t) \left\{ 1 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} |z_{n,k}(t)|^j \right\} \right].
\]

46
Using the upper bounds just given for $|z_{n,k}(t)|$, we obtain

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{|t|^3}{24 \sigma_n^3} \frac{k^2}{(n-k)^2} + \frac{t^4}{4 \sigma_n^4} + \frac{n}{n-k} \frac{c^2}{\sigma_n^2} \left\{ 1 + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{3} \right)^j \right\} \leq \frac{5}{24} \frac{|t|^3}{\sigma_n^3} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{n-k}{k^2},$$

so that recalling (1.3) again,

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) \leq \frac{5}{24} \frac{|t|^3}{\sigma_n^3}. \tag{4.13}$$

We now turn to $\delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t)$ in (4.7). Clearly,

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) \leq \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^j \left| \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \frac{t^2}{2 \sigma_n^2} \right|^j \leq \frac{1}{3} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^3 \left| \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \frac{t^2}{2 \sigma_n^2} \right|^3 \right] \leq \frac{1}{3} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[ \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^3 \left| \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \frac{t^2}{2 \sigma_n^2} \right|^3 \right].$$

By (4.5), the infinite sum here is not greater than $\sum_{j=0}^{\infty} c^j = 1/(1-c)$, for any fixed $c \in (0, 1)$ chosen in the definition of $c_n$, and this, together with the inequality

$$\left| \frac{-it}{\sigma_n} + \frac{t^2}{2 \sigma_n^2} \right|^3 = \frac{|t|^3}{\sigma_n^3} \left( 1 + \frac{t^2}{4 \sigma_n^2} \right)^{3/2} \leq \frac{|t|^3}{\sigma_n^3} \left( \frac{5}{4} \right)^{3/2},$$

which is true because $|t| < \sigma_n$ was assumed, gives

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) \leq \frac{5\sqrt{5}}{24(1-c) \sigma_n^3} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^3}{k^3} =: \frac{5\sqrt{5}}{24(1-c) \sigma_n^3} r_{n,m}.$$

For the remaining sum $r_{n,m}$ here, by (1.3) we obtain

$$r_{n,m} = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{nk} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \leq \frac{(n-m-1)^2}{n(m+1)} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} \leq \frac{(n-m-1)^2}{n(m+1)} \sigma_n^2 \leq \frac{\sqrt{n(n-m-1)}}{m+1} \sigma_n^2 \leq \frac{\sigma_n^2}{c_n},$$

and we conclude

$$\delta_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) \leq \frac{5\sqrt{5}}{24(1-c) c_n \sigma_n^3}. \tag{4.14}$$
It remains to deal with the deviation $|\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) - e^{-t^2/2}|$. We have

$$
|\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) - e^{-t^2/2}| = \exp\left\{{-\frac{t^2}{2}}\right\} \left| \exp\left\{\sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left(\frac{-it^3}{2\sigma_n^3} + \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4}\right)\right\} - 1 \right|
$$

$$
= \exp\left\{{-\frac{t^2}{2}}\right\} \left| \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{j!} \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left(\frac{-it^3}{2\sigma_n^3} + \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4}\right) \right|^j \right|
$$

$$
\leq \exp\left\{{-\frac{t^2}{2}}\right\} \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \frac{1}{j!} \left| \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left(\frac{-it^3}{2\sigma_n^3} + \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4}\right) \right|^j
$$

$$
\leq \exp\left\{{-\frac{t^2}{2}}\right\} s_{n,m}(t) \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{s_{n,m}(t)}{j!},
$$

where

$$
s_{n,m}(t) = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \left|\frac{-it^3}{2\sigma_n^3} + \frac{t^4}{8\sigma_n^4}\right| = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2} \sqrt{\frac{t^6}{4\sigma_n^6} + \frac{t^8}{64\sigma_n^8}}.
$$

We give two different bounds for $s_{n,m}(t)$. First, since $|t| < \sigma_n$, by (1.3) we can write

$$
s_{n,m}(t) = \frac{|t|^3}{2\sigma_n^3} \sqrt{1 + \frac{t^2}{16\sigma_n^2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2}} \leq \frac{\sqrt{17}|t|^3}{8\sigma_n^3} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} = \frac{\sqrt{17}|t|^3}{8\sigma_n^3}.
$$

For the second bound, we first estimate $(n-k)|t|/(n\sigma_n)$. Applying (4.4), and the fact that the maximum of the function $\sqrt{x(1-x)}$ is 1/2 on the interval [0,1], we get

$$
\frac{n-k}{n} \frac{|t|}{\sigma_n} \leq \frac{n-k}{n} \frac{|t|}{\sqrt{n(n-k)}} = \sqrt{\frac{n-k}{n}} \frac{k}{n} \leq \frac{n-k}{n} \frac{k}{n} \leq \frac{1}{2}.
$$

This inequality, along with $|t| < \sigma_n$ and (1.3), gives

$$
s_{n,m}(t) = \frac{t^2}{2\sigma_n^2} \sqrt{1 + \frac{t^2}{16\sigma_n^2} \sum_{k=m+1}^{n-1} \left[\frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} - \frac{n-k}{n} \frac{|t|}{\sigma_n}\right]} \leq \frac{\sqrt{17}}{16} t^2.
$$

Continuing, we apply the first bound of $s_{n,m}(t)$ to the function before the sum and the second one to each term of the sum, to get

$$
|\varphi_{n,m}^{[2]}(t) - e^{-t^2/2}| \leq \frac{\sqrt{17}}{8\sigma_n} \exp\left\{\frac{1}{2} - \frac{\sqrt{17}}{16} t^2\right\}
$$

$$
\leq \frac{\sqrt{17}}{8\sigma_n} \exp\left\{-\frac{3}{16} t^2\right\}. \quad (4.15)
$$

Now, collecting the bounds, we can return to the estimation of the integrals in (4.8). We obtain

$$
\frac{1}{2} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}(t)}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}^{[1]}(t) \, dt \leq \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \frac{5}{48} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp\left\{-\frac{20t^2}{\pi^4}\right\} t^2 \, dt = \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \frac{\sqrt{5\pi^{13/2}}}{3840},
$$

48
by (4.10) and (4.13);
\[ \frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n \sigma_n}^{c_n \sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}[t]}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}(t) \, dt \leq \frac{1}{c_n \sigma_n} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp\left\{ -\frac{t^2}{4} \right\} t^2 \, dt = \frac{5 \sqrt{\pi}}{12}, \]
by (4.11) and (4.13);
\[ \frac{1}{2} \int_{-c_n \sigma_n}^{c_n \sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}[t]}{t} \right| \delta_{n,m}(t) \, dt \leq \frac{1}{c_n \sigma_n} \frac{5 \sqrt{\pi}}{48} \frac{5 \sqrt{\pi}}{12(1-c)} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp\left\{ -\frac{3t^2}{8} \right\} t^2 \, dt \]
\[ = \frac{1}{c_n \sigma_n} \frac{5 \sqrt{30\pi}}{54(1-c)}, \]
by (4.12) and (4.14); and finally
\[ \int_{-c_n \sigma_n}^{c_n \sigma_n} \left| \frac{\varphi_{n,m}[t]}{t} - e^{-t^2/2} \right| \, dt \leq \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp\left\{ -\frac{3t^2}{16} \right\} t^2 \, dt = \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \frac{4 \sqrt{51\pi}}{9}, \]
by (4.15). Since \( 1/\sigma_n \leq 1/(c_n \sigma_n) \) by the definition of \( c_n \) in (4.2), substitution of all these bounds into (4.8) yields \( I_{n,m} \leq C/(c_n \sigma_n) \), where
\[ C = \sqrt{5\pi} \frac{13/2}{3840} + \frac{5 \sqrt{\pi}}{12} + \frac{5 \sqrt{5\pi}}{12(1-c)} + \frac{5 \sqrt{30\pi}}{54(1-c)} + \frac{4 \sqrt{51\pi}}{9} < \frac{2.5503}{1-c} + 7.3566 \]
Writing this back in (4.3), we obtain the inequality
\[ \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{n,m}(x) - \Phi(x) \right| \leq \frac{\tilde{C}}{c_n \sigma_n} \]
with the constant
\[ \tilde{C} = \left( \frac{2.5503}{1-c} + 7.3566 \right) \frac{b}{2\pi} + \frac{c_b}{\sqrt{2\pi}}. \]
According to Csörgő [11], the minimum of \( c_b \) is 4.439 occurring at \( b = 1.868 \), and with these values \( \tilde{C} > 0.7583/(1-c) + 3.9581 \). Also, it is easy to see from the definition of \( c_n \) in (4.2) that \( c_n \geq c_n^m \), thus
\[ \sup_{x \in \mathbb{R}} \left| F_{n,m}(x) - \Phi(x) \right| \leq \frac{0.7583/(1-c) + 3.95811}{c} \frac{n}{m} \frac{1}{\sigma_n}. \]
Now minimizing \( \frac{0.7583/(1-c) + 3.95811}{c} \) over \( c \in (0,1) \), we finally obtain the inequality of the theorem with \( C = 9.257. \)
Chapter 5

Poisson approximation

In the first section of this chapter, we leave the coupon collector’s problem and concern Poisson approximation to the distribution of sums of independent nonnegative integer valued random variables in general. We complement the classical Poisson convergence theorem of Gnedenko and Kolmogorov [15], in the setting of triangular arrays, with error bounds that are expressed in terms of total variation distance, which was defined in Section 2.1. as

\[ d_{TV}(X, Y) = \sup_{A \subseteq \mathbb{Z}^+} |\mathbb{P}(X \in A) - \mathbb{P}(Y \in A)|, \] (5.1)

for any two random variables \( X \) and \( Y \) that map into \( \mathbb{Z}^+ := \{0, 1, \ldots\} \).

For each \( n \), we approximate the distribution of the \( n \)-th row sum with a Poisson distribution whose mean \( \lambda_n \) is defined only in terms of the distributions of the random variables in the \( n \)-th row, namely \( \lambda_n \) equals the sum of the probabilities \( \mathbb{P}(X \neq 0) \), where \( X \) runs over the random variables of the \( n \)-th row. We do not assume the existence of moments, as is the case in analogous results proved by Barbour and Hall [4], and our lower bounds are much simpler in form to theirs, being of precisely the same form, up to a constant, as our upper bound, provided that the means \( \lambda_n \) are bounded away from infinity.

We then continue in the second section of the chapter with an application of these results to the coupon collector’s problem. We recall from Section 1.2. that Baum and Billingsley proved in [8] (using the method of characteristic functions) that if

\[ m \to \infty \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{n - m}{\sqrt{n}} \to \sqrt{2\lambda} \quad \text{for some} \quad \lambda > 0 \quad \text{constant, as} \quad n \to \infty, \] (5.2)

then \( W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) converges in distribution to the Poisson law with mean \( \lambda \). We express this problem as a special case of the Poisson limit theorem above, and immediately obtain the corresponding Poisson approximation results. An even stronger result can be proved in this special case: due to the combinatorial structure of the problem, one can determine explicitly the first order term in the error of the approximation, and this is what we shall do in Section 5.3.

Finally, in Section 5.4. we give another Poisson approximation result to the coupon collector’s waiting time. This time the mean \( \lambda'_n \) of the approximating Poisson law is chosen to match the mean of the waiting time. The result is proven with the help of Stein’s method.
5.1 Poisson approximation in a general Poisson limit theorem

In [15] (p. 132) Gnedenko and Kolmogorov give necessary and sufficient conditions for sums of independent infinitesimal random variables to converge to the Poisson law. In case of nonnegative integer valued random variables their limit theorem can be stated as follows.

**Theorem 5.1.1 (Gnedenko, Kolmogorov)** Let \( \{Y_{n1}, Y_{n2}, \ldots, Y_{nr_n}\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) be a triangular array of row-wise independent nonnegative integer valued random variables such that

\[
\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} P(Y_{nk} = 0) \to 1, \quad n \to \infty, \tag{5.3}
\]

\[
\sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 1) \to \lambda, \quad \lambda > 0 \text{ constant}, \quad n \to \infty \tag{5.4}
\]

\[
\sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 2) \to 0, \quad n \to \infty. \tag{5.5}
\]

Then

\[Y_n := \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} Y_{nk} \overset{D}{\to} N_\lambda\]

as \( n \to \infty \), where \( N_\lambda \) is a Poisson random variable with parameter \( \lambda \).

We shall refine the obvious approximation of the \( Y_n \)-s that the limit theorem suggests by approximating the distribution of each of the \( Y_n \) random variables not with the limiting Poisson distribution, but with a Poisson distribution that has a suitably chosen parameter that depends on \( n \), namely by the distribution of \( N_{\lambda_n} \sim \text{Po}(\lambda_n) \), where

\[\lambda_n = \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 1).\]

**Theorem 5.1.2 (The upper bound.)** For any triangular array \( \{Y_{n1}, Y_{n2}, \ldots, Y_{nr_n}\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) of row-wise independent nonnegative integer valued random variables

\[d_{TV}(D(Y_n), \text{Po}(\lambda_n)) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} \left[ P(Y_{nk} \geq 2) + P(Y_{nk} \geq 1)^2 \right].\]

**Proof.** The proof follows the argument in [5] p. 181. For each \( k = 1, 2, \ldots, r_n, \ n \in \mathbb{N} \), we define the random variable

\[I_{nk} := \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } Y_{nk} = 0; \\ 1, & \text{if } Y_{nk} \geq 1. \end{cases}\]
Thus for each \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), \( I_n := \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} I_{nk} \) is a sum of independent Bernoulli random variables with success probabilities \( q_{nk} := P(Y_{nk} \geq 1) \), \( k = 1, 2, \ldots, r_n \). By Le Cam’s inequality [19]
\[
d_{TV}(D(I_n), Po(\lambda_n)) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} q_{nk}^2 = \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 1)^2.
\]
Also, for any two random variables \( X \) and \( Y \) defined on the same probability space the coupling inequality (2.16) says that
\[
d_{TV}(D(X), D(Y)) \leq P(X \neq Y),
\]
hence we have
\[
d_{TV}(D(Y_n), D(I_n)) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \neq I_{nk}) = \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 1) - \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} = 0).
\]
Putting these two bounds together in
\[
d_{TV}(D(Y_n), Po(\lambda_n)) \leq d_{TV}(D(Y_n), D(I_n)) + d_{TV}(D(I_n), Po(\lambda_n)),
\]
the assertion of the theorem follows.

Theorem 5.1.3 (The lower bound.) If \( \{Y_{n1}, Y_{n2}, \ldots, Y_{nr_n}\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) is a triangular array of row-wise independent nonnegative integer valued random variables such that
\[
\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} P(Y_{nk} = 0) \geq \frac{3}{4} \text{ for all } n \in \mathbb{N},
\]
then
\[
d_{TV}(D(Y_n), Po(\lambda_n)) \geq \frac{1}{10} \left( \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} = 0) \right) \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} [P(Y_{nk} \geq 2) + P(Y_{nk} \geq 1)^2].
\]
Before turning to the proof of Theorem 5.1.3 we prove a simple result we are going to need later on.

Proposition 5.1.1 If \( 0 \leq y_i \leq x_i \leq 1 \) for all \( i = 1, 2, \ldots, n \), \( n \in \mathbb{N} \), then
\[
\left( \prod_{i=1}^{n} y_i \right) \sum_{i=1}^{n} (x_i - y_i) \leq \prod_{i=1}^{n} x_i - \prod_{i=1}^{n} y_i \leq \sum_{i=1}^{n} (x_i - y_i).
\]
Proof. Defining \( y_0 := 1 \), we can write the difference of the two products in the form of a telescopic sum, thus
\[
\prod_{i=1}^{n} x_i - \prod_{i=1}^{n} y_i = \sum_{k=1}^{n} \left[ y_1 \cdots y_{k-1} x_k \cdots x_n - y_1 \cdots y_{k+1} \cdots x_n \right]
\]
\[
= \sum_{k=1}^{n} (x_k - y_k)(y_1 \cdots y_{k-1} x_{k+1} \cdots x_n).
\]
Due to our assumption on the $y_i$-s the last expression can be bounded form above and from below by

$$y_1 \cdots y_n \sum_{k=1}^{n} (x_k - y_k) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{n} (x_k - y_k)(y_1 \cdots y_{k-1} x_{k+1} \cdots x_n) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{n} (x_k - y_k),$$

and the assertion follows. ■

**Proof of Theorem 5.1.3.** We introduce the notations $P(Y_{nk} = 0) = p_{nk}$ and $P(Y_{nk} = 1) = (1 - p_{nk})p_{nk}$, $k = 1, 2, \ldots, r_n$, thus $\lambda_n = \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$. We are going to prove the theorem by approximating the following elementary lower bound for the total variation distance of the distributions considered:

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(Y_n), \mathcal{P}(\lambda_n)) \geq \frac{1}{2} |P(Y_n = 0) - P(N_{\lambda_n} = 0)| + \frac{1}{2} |P(Y_n = 1) - P(N_{\lambda_n} = 1)|, \quad (5.6)$$

which can be justified by taking $A = \{0\}$ and $A = \{1\}$ in (5.1).

We start by bounding the difference of the point probabilities at 0. Since

$$P(N_{\lambda_n} = 0) = e^{-\lambda_n} = \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} e^{-(1 - p_{nk})},$$

$$P(Y_n = 0) = \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk},$$

and $e^{-(1 - p_{nk})} \geq p_{nk}$ for all $k = 1, 2, \ldots, r_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$, applying the Proposition above yields

$$|P(N_{\lambda_n} = 0) - P(Y_n = 0)| \geq \left( \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \right) \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} [e^{-(1 - p_{nk})} - p_{nk}] .$$

Since $1 - p_{nk} \leq 1$, we have

$$e^{-(1 - p_{nk})} \geq 1 - (1 - p_{nk}) + \frac{1}{2} (1 - p_{nk})^2 - \frac{1}{6} (1 - p_{nk})^3 \geq p_{nk} + \frac{1}{3} (1 - p_{nk})^2$$

for $k = 1, 2, \ldots, n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$, which yields

$$|P(N_{\lambda_n} = 0) - P(Y_n = 0)| \geq \frac{1}{3} \left( \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \right) \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 . \quad (5.7)$$

This inequality implies the assertion of Theorem 5.1.3 in the case when $3 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \geq 2 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - p_{nk})$, because we can bound $3/5$th of the sum in the display above using this assumption. In fact in this case we obtain a better bound than the one we aimed at. Otherwise, if $2 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - p_{nk}) \geq 3 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2$, we need to examine the point probabilities at 1 too to improve our current bound.

We have

$$P(N_{\lambda_n} = 1) = \lambda_n e^{-\lambda_n} = \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk}) \exp \left\{ -\sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk}) \right\},$$

54
and since for an arbitrary \( n \in \mathbb{N} \) \( Y_n = 1 \) iff for \( k = 1, 2, \ldots, r_n \) exactly one of the \( Y_{nk} \)-s takes on 1 and the rest take on 0,

\[
P(Y_n = 1) = \left( \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \right) \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} \frac{(1 - p_{nk})\tilde{p}_{nk}}{p_{nk}}.
\]

Some elementary algebra gives

\[
P(N_{\lambda n} = 1) - P(Y_n = 1) = \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \left( \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) - \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} \frac{(1 - p_{nk})^2\tilde{p}_{nk}}{p_{nk}} \right) +
\]

\[
+ \left( \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk}) \right\} - \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \right) \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk}),
\]

where in the second term we recognize the point probabilities at 0. Using \( \tilde{p}_{nk} \leq \frac{1}{\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} p_{nk}} \) and the fact that the difference of the 0 probabilities in the formula above is always positive we obtain

\[
P(N_{\lambda n} = 1) - P(Y_n = 1) \geq \prod_{k=1}^{r_n} p_{nk} \left( \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) - \frac{1}{\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} p_{nk}} \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \right).
\]

From this by inequality (5.7) we obtain

\[
P(N_{\lambda n} = 0) - P(Y_n = 0) + P(N_{\lambda n} = 1) - P(Y_n = 1) \geq \left( \prod_{k=1}^{n} p_{nk} \right) \left( \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) + \frac{1}{3} - \frac{1}{\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} p_{nk}} \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \right).
\]

Now \( \frac{1}{3} - \frac{1}{\min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} p_{nk}} \geq -1 \) in the range of \( n \) for which the assumption \( \min_{1 \leq k \leq r_n} p_{nk} \geq \frac{3}{4} \) of the Theorem holds, thus

\[
P(N_{\lambda n} = 0) - P(Y_n = 0) + P(N_{\lambda n} = 1) - P(Y_n = 1) \geq \left( \prod_{k=1}^{n} p_{nk} \right) \left( \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) - \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \right),
\]

and it can be seen that the latter bound is at most

\[
\frac{1}{5} \left( \prod_{k=1}^{n} p_{nk} \right) \left( \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) + \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \right)
\]

for all \( n \) such that \( 2 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})(1 - \tilde{p}_{nk}) \geq 3 \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} (1 - p_{nk})^2 \). This together with (5.6) proves the Theorem. \( \blacksquare \)
Theorems 5.1.3 and 5.1.2 together state that the order of the error of our Poisson approximation for the random variables in Theorem 5.1.1 is

\[ \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} \left[ P(Y_{nk} \notin \{0, 1\}) + P(Y_{nk} \geq 1)^2 \right]. \]

Barbour and Hall have proved similar results in [4] using Stein’s method: they approximate a sum \( \sum_{j=1}^{n} Y_j \) of independent nonnegative integer valued random variables with a Poisson variable that has mean \( \sum_{j=1}^{n} P(Y_j = 1) \) or \( \sum_{j=1}^{n} E(Y_j) \). (Note that the parameter of our approximating Poisson random variable is between these two values.) Their bounds are expressed differently, and involve second moments of the random variables \( Y_j \). Moreover, their lower bounds would yield no useful information at all in the application to be considered in the next section.

We also obtain the following result.

**Corollary 5.1.1** For the rate of convergence in Theorem 5.1.1 we have the upper bound

\[ d_{TV}(D(Y_n), Po(\lambda)) \leq \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} \left[ P(Y_{nk} \geq 2) + P(Y_{nk} \geq 1)^2 \right] + \left| \sum_{k=1}^{r_n} P(Y_{nk} \geq 1) - \lambda \right|, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}. \]

**Proof.** Since

\[ d_{TV}(D(Y_n), Po(\lambda)) \leq d_{TV}(D(Y_n), Po(\lambda_n)) + d_{TV}(Po(\lambda_n), Po(\lambda)), \]

the assertion follows from Theorem 5.1.2 and because for any \( N_{\nu_1} \sim \text{Poisson}(\nu_1) \) and \( N_{\nu_2} \sim \text{Poisson}(\nu_2) \), where \( 0 < \nu_1 < \nu_2 \), we have

\[ d_{TV}(D(N_{\nu_1}), D(N_{\nu_2})) \leq \min \left\{ 1, \nu_2^{-1/2} \right\} (\nu_2 - \nu_1). \]

For reference see for example Remark 1.1.4. in [5]. ■

### 5.2 Coupon collecting with an approximately Poisson distributed waiting time – application of the general results

We begin this section by examining how the coupon collector’s problem defined in the introduction fits in the framework of the previous section. The equality in distribution in (1.1) can be reformulated for \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} := W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) as

\[ \tilde{W}_{n,m} \overset{D}{=} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \tilde{X}_{n,i}, \quad (5.8) \]
where the $\tilde{X}_{n,i}, i = m+1, \ldots, n$, random variables are independent, and $\tilde{X}_{n,i}+1$ has geometric distributions with success probability $i/n$, $i \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$. The triangular array \{\(\tilde{X}_{n,m+1}, \ldots, \tilde{X}_{n,n}\)\} satisfies the conditions of Theorem 5.1.1: the variables of the array are infinitesimal, i.e. they satisfy condition (5.3): for any $0 < \varepsilon < 1$

$$\max_{m+1 \leq i \leq n} P(\tilde{X}_{n,i} > \varepsilon) = \left[1 - \min_{m+1 \leq i \leq n} P(\tilde{X}_{n,i} = 0)\right] = \left[1 - \min_{m+1 \leq i \leq n} \frac{i}{n}\right] = \frac{n-m+1}{n} \to 0,$$

by (5.2); and according to (5.9) and (5.10) in the proposition below, they also satisfy conditions (5.4) and (5.5).

**Proposition 5.2.1** If \(\{m = m(n)\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}\) is a sequence of integers that satisfies (5.2), then

$$\lambda_n = \lambda_{n,1} := \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right) \to \lambda, \quad \text{and}$$

$$\lambda_{n,j} := \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{j} \leq \lambda_n \left(\frac{2\lambda_n}{n}\right)^{\frac{j-1}{2}}, \quad \text{and} \quad \lambda_{n,j} \to 0, \quad j = 2, 3, \ldots \quad (5.10)$$

**Proof.** (5.9) is true, because

$$\lambda_n = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right) = n - m - 1 \cdot \frac{n(n+1)}{2} - m(m+1) \to \frac{(n-m)(n-m-1)}{2n} \to \lambda$$

by (5.2). By taking the square root of both sides of the equality above it can be deduced that

$$\frac{n-m-1}{\sqrt{n}} \leq \sqrt{2\lambda_n}. \quad (5.11)$$

Now we prove the first assertion of (5.10) by induction. For an arbitrary $j = 2, 3, \ldots$ we bound $\lambda_{n,j}$ as follows:

$$\lambda_{n,j} = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{j} \leq \frac{n-m-1}{n} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{j-1} = \frac{n-m-1}{n} \lambda_{n,j-1}$$

Since for $j = 2$ this gives $\lambda_{n,2} \leq \lambda_n \sqrt{\frac{2\lambda_n}{n}}$ by (5.11), we have the first part of (5.10) in this case. If we have the same result for some $j > 2$, then it holds true for $j + 1$ as well by the argument above, (5.11) and the inductional hypothesis. Since $\lambda_n \to \lambda$ by (5.9), the second part of (5.10) follows from the first. \(\blacksquare\)

Thus we see that the limit theorem proved by Baum and Billingsley [8] concerning the coupon collector’s problem is a special case of the Gnedenko–Kolmogorov theorem. If we apply the results of the previous section to $\tilde{W}_{n,m}$, we obtain the following.
Corollary 5.2.1 If \( \{m = m(n)\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) is a sequence of integers that satisfies (5.2), then the error of the approximation of the coupon collector’s \( \widehat{W}_{n,m} \) waiting time with the Poisson random variable \( N_{\lambda_n} \), that has mean \( \lambda_n = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} (1 - \frac{i}{n}) \), is of order \( \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} (1 - \frac{i}{n})^2 \). In fact, for all \( n \) such that \( \min_{m+1 \leq i \leq n} \frac{i}{n} \geq \frac{3}{2} \),

\[
\frac{1}{n} \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \leq d_{TV}(D(\widehat{W}_{n,m}), D(N_{\lambda_n})) \leq 2 \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 .
\]

Corollary 5.2.2 For the rate of convergence in the Poisson limit theorem concerning the coupon collector’s problem we have the upper bound

\[
d_{TV}(D(\widehat{W}_{n,m}), D(N_{\lambda})) \leq 2 \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 + \left| \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right) - \lambda \right| .
\]

5.3 Coupon collecting with an approximately Poisson distributed waiting time – combinatorial approach

Now we undertake a combinatorial approach to the coupon collector’s problem, which will yield us a stronger result than the one of Corollary 5.2.1. Namely, we shall derive the first asymptotic correction of the \( P(\widehat{W}_{n,m} = k), k = 0, 1, \ldots, \) probabilities to the corresponding Poisson point probabilities. We state the result in the following theorem. We note that in principal the method presented in the proof can be extended to determine higher order terms in the asymptotic expansion.

Theorem 5.3.1 If \( \{m = m(n)\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \) is a sequence of nonnegative integers that satisfies (5.2) and \( \lambda_n \) and \( \lambda_{n,2} \) are defined as in (5.9) and (5.10), then

\[
P(\widehat{W}_{n,m} = 0) = e^{-\lambda_n} - e^{-\lambda_n} \frac{\lambda_{n,2}}{2} + O\left( \frac{1}{n} \right) ,
\]

\[
P(\widehat{W}_{n,m} = 1) = e^{-\lambda_n} \lambda_n - e^{-\lambda_n} \lambda_n \frac{\lambda_{n,2}}{2} + O\left( \frac{1}{n} \right) ,
\]

\[
P(\widehat{W}_{n,m} = k) = e^{-\lambda_n} \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} + e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \frac{\lambda_n^{k-2}}{(k-2)!} - \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} \right) \frac{\lambda_{n,2}}{2} + O\left( \frac{1}{n} \right) , \quad k \geq 2.
\]
We note that \( \lambda_{n,2} = \frac{(2\lambda_n)^{3/2}}{3\sqrt{n}} + O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \). Indeed,

\[
\lambda_{n,2} = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \\
= n - m - \frac{2}{n} \left[ \frac{n(n+1)}{2} - \frac{m(m+1)}{2} \right] + \frac{1}{n^2} \left[ \frac{n(n+1)(2n+1)}{2} - \frac{m(m+1)(2m+1)}{2} \right] \\
= \frac{(n-m)(n-m-1)(n-m-\frac{1}{2})}{3n^2} \\
= \frac{(2\lambda_n)^{3/2}}{3\sqrt{n}} + \left( \frac{n-m}(n-m-1) \right) \left( n - m - \frac{1}{2} - \sqrt{(n-m)(n-m-1)} \right),
\]

where we used the fact that \( \lambda_n = \frac{(n-m)(n-m-1)}{2n} \), which we calculated in the proof of Proposition 5.2.1, and the second term in the formula above is \( O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right) \) by (5.2).

**Proof of Theorem 5.3.1.** We are going to represent each possible outcome of the collector’s sampling with a sequence of integers the following way: let us suppose that while sampling (with replacement), the collector labels the distinct coupons he draws form 1 to \( n-m \) in the order he obtains them in the course of time, and after each draw he writes down the label of the coupon just drawn. So he begins the enumeration of labels with a 1 after the first draw, and each number that he writes to the end of his list after a draw is either the label already on the coupon he just got (if he had drawn the same one before), or it is the label he gives the coupon at that moment, which would be the smallest positive integer he has not yet used in the process of sampling and labeling. In the first case we call the new member of the sequence "superfluous", while in the second case we call it a "first appearance".

We fix an arbitrary \( k \in \mathbb{N} \), and we suppose that \( n \) so big that \( n-m > k \) holds. Now \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} = k \) means that the collector had \( k \) "superfluous" draws, thus the corresponding representing sequence contains \( n-m \) "first appearances" and \( k \) "superfluous" members. We categorize all such outcomes according to how the \( k \) "superfluous" draws are split into blocks by the \( n-m \) "first appearances" in the representing sequences: to each vector \( \tilde{k} = (k_{m+1}, k_{m+2}, \ldots, k_{n-1}) \), where \( k_i \in \mathbb{Z}_+, \ i = m+1, \ldots, n-1 \), and \( \sum_{i=m+1}^{n-1} k_i = k \), correspond the sequences where there are \( k_{n-1} \) "superfluous" members between the 1st and 2nd "first appearances", \( k_{n-2} \) "superfluous" members between the 2nd and 3rd "first appearances", and so on, \( k_{m+1} \) "superfluous" members between the \((n-m-1)\)th and \((n-m)\)th "first appearances". (This is the same as saying that \( \tilde{X}_{ni} = k_i \), for all \( i = m+1, \ldots, n \).) The probability of getting such a sequence is

\[
\frac{n}{n} \left( 1 - \frac{n-1}{n} \right)^{k_{n-1}} \frac{n-1}{n} \left( 1 - \frac{n-2}{n} \right)^{k_{n-2}} \cdots \left( 1 - \frac{m+1}{n} \right)^{k_{m+1}} \frac{m+1}{n} \\
= \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right) \right)^{k_i} \frac{n-1}{\prod_{i=m+1}^{k_i} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)}. 
\]

It follows that

\[
P(\tilde{W}_{n,m} = k) = \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) \sum_{\tilde{k} \in \mathbb{K}} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^{k_i}, \quad (5.12)
\]
where

\[ I_k := \left\{ k \in \mathbb{Z}_+^{n-m-1} : \sum_{i=m+1}^{n-1} k_i = k \right\}. \]

Now we are going to examine the sum in (5.12) above, which we denote by \( S_{n,m,k} = S_k \). For \( k = 0 \) it is an empty sum, and thus it equals \( 1 \) by definition. Now let us suppose that \( k > 2 \), we are going to return to the cases \( k = 0 \) and \( 1 \) later on. For an arbitrary such \( k \) we see that

\[ I_k = \bigcup_{l=1}^{k} I_{k,l}, \quad \text{where} \quad I_{k,l} = \{ k \in I_k : k \text{ has exactly } l \text{ nonzero components} \}, l = 1, \ldots, k, \]

and we correspondingly define \( S_{k,l} \) to be the part of \( S_k \) that contains the summands over \( k \in I_{k,l} \), thus we have

\[ S_k = \sum_{I_k} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^{k_i} = \sum_{l=1}^{k} \sum_{I_{k,l}} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^{k_i} = \sum_{l=1}^{k} S_{k,l}. \quad (5.13) \]

To determine the limit of \( S_k \) we examine the asymptotic behavior of the \( S_{k,l} \) expressions separately. We fix an arbitrary \( l = 1, \ldots, k \), and with \( |A| \) denoting the cardinality of an arbitrary set \( A \), we now calculate \( |I_{k,l}| \). We can think of the vectors in \( I_k \) as the results of distributing \( k \) 1-s in \( n - m - 1 \) spaces in all possible ways: to each of these distributions correspond a vector in \( I_k \) whose \( i \text{th} \) component is the number of 1-s put in the \( i \text{th} \) space, \( i = m + 1, \ldots, n \). To produce a vector in \( I_{k,l} \) we first choose \( l \) different spaces, and we put a 1 in each of them, then we distribute the remaining \( k - l \) 1-s in these previously chosen \( l \) spaces that already have a 1, but this time any such space can be chosen more than once. This gives

\[ |I_{k,l}| = \binom{n - m - 1}{l} \binom{k - 1}{k - l}, \quad l = 1, \ldots, k. \]

We obviously bound \( S_{k,l} \) from above if we replace each of the factors in its products by the largest one of them, namely by \( 1 - \frac{m+1}{n} \). This together with the just calculated formula gives

\[ S_{k,l} \leq \binom{n - m - 1}{l} \binom{k - 1}{k - l} \left( 1 - \frac{m+1}{n} \right)^k \leq (k - 1)! \left( \frac{n - m - 1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{k+l} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{k-l}. \]

Hence by (5.11) we have

\[ S_{k,l} \leq \frac{(k-1)!}{l!(l-1)!} \sqrt{2\lambda_n}^{k+l} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{k-l} \quad \text{and} \quad \sum_{l=1}^{l'} S_{k,l} \leq k! \min \left\{ 1, (2\lambda_n)^k \right\} \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{k-l'} \quad (5.14) \]

for any \( l' \in \{1, \ldots, k\} \). We see from the first inequality that \( S_{k,l} \) goes to 0 for \( l = 1, \ldots, k-1 \), but it gives a constant upper bound for \( l = k \). We are going to examine the latter case more carefully. Notice that the components of a vector in \( I_{k,k} \) are all 0-s and 1-s, thus for any \( k \in I_{k,k} \) \( \frac{1}{k_{m+1}k_{m+2} \cdots k_{n-1}} = 1 \). Using this and the decomposition of the index set \( I_k = \bigcup_{l=1}^{k} I_{k,l} \)
we obtain

\[ S_{k,k} = \frac{1}{k!} \sum_{I \subseteq I_k} k! \frac{k!}{k_{m+1}!k_{m+2}! \ldots k_{n-1}!} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{k_i} \]

\[ - \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} \sum_{I \subseteq I_{k,l}} \frac{1}{k_{m+1}!k_{m+2}! \ldots k_{n-1}!} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{k_i} \]

The first term of \( S_{k,k} \) is equal to \( \frac{1}{k!} \left(\sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{k}\right) \) by the polynomial theorem, thus we have

\[ S_{k,k} = \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} - \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} \sum_{I \subseteq I_{k,l}} \frac{1}{k_{m+1}!k_{m+2}! \ldots k_{n-1}!} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{k_i} \]

(5.15)

It follows that \( \lim_{n \to \infty} S_{k,k} = \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} \), because we have (5.9), and the sum above can be bounded by \( \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} S_{k,l} \), which goes to 0 by (5.14). Thus putting together our results for the expressions \( S_{k,l} \) in (5.13), we conclude that the part of \( S_k \) that counts – in the sense that it asymptotically contributes a positive constant to \( S_k \) – is \( S_{k,k} \), which is the part of the sum in the defining formula of \( S_k \) that corresponds to the 0 - 1 vectors of the \( I_k \) index set.

If we write (5.15) into (5.13), we obtain the following formula for \( S_k \):

\[ S_k = \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} + \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} R_{k,l}, \]

(5.16)

where

\[ R_{k,l} = \sum_{I \subseteq I_{k,l}} \left(1 - \frac{1}{k_{m+1}!k_{m+2}! \ldots k_{n-1}!} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left(1 - \frac{i}{n}\right)^{k_i}\right). \]

Our aim is to determine the first order term of the error when we approximate \( S_k \) by \( \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} \). Since \( R_{k,l} \leq S_{k,l} \) for each \( l = 1, \ldots, k - 1 \), and for the latter expressions we have the bounds of (5.14), we see that \( \sum_{l=1}^{k-1} R_{k,l} = O\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right) \), and the same, but more detailed argument also gives

\[ \sum_{l=1}^{k-2} R_{k,l} \leq \sum_{l=1}^{k-2} S_{k,l} \leq k! \min \left\{ 1, (2\lambda_n)^k \right\} \frac{1}{n}. \]

(5.17)

Thus the leading term of the error \( \left| S_k - \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} \right| \) is of order \( \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \), and it comes from the term \( R_{k,k-1} \).

Before examining \( R_{k,k-1} \) we introduce some notations for further use. As an analogue of the set \( I_{k,l} \) we define \( I_{k-2,l} \) to be the set of vectors \( k \in \mathbb{Z}_{+}^{n-m-1} \) such that \( \sum_{i=m+1}^{n-1} k_i = k - 2 \) and \( k \) has exactly \( l \) nonzero components, \( l = 1, \ldots, k - 2 \). Also, as an analogue of the expressions \( S_{k,l} \) and \( S_k \) we define \( S_{k-2,l} \) and \( S_{k-2} \) by the formulas in (5.13) with \( k \) replaced by \( k - 2 \). Finally we introduce

\[ I_{k-2,k-2}^j = \{ k \in I_{k-2,k-2} : k_j = 0 \}, \quad j = m + 1, \ldots, n. \]
We now return to $R_{k,k-1}$. The corresponding index set $I_{k,k-1}$ contains vectors that have exactly one component equal to 2, $k - 2$ components equal to 1, and the rest 0. Thus we have

$$R_{k,k-1} = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^k \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^k_i$$

We can write $R_{k,k-1}$ in another form, if we first sum according to the component of the vectors in $I_{k,k-1}$ which equals 2:

$$R_{k,k-1} = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 \left( \sum_{k \in I_{k-2,k-2}} \prod_{i=m+1}^{n-1} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^k \right)$$

We recognize $S_{k-2,k-2}$ in the first sum in the brackets, thus we can replace it by the formula in (5.15) with $k - 2$ in the place of $k$. As for the second sum in the brackets, we see that $k_j = 1$, so there is a $1 - \frac{j}{n}$ factor in each of the products, which we can bring before the brackets. These considerations lead to

$$R_{k,k-1} = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 \frac{\lambda_n^{k-2}}{(k-2)!}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 \lambda_n^{k-2} - R_{k,k-1} R_{k,k-1}^2$$

Now we bound the last two expressions. First,

$$0 \leq R_{k,k-1} \leq \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 \sum_{l=1}^{k-3} S_{k-2,l} \leq \frac{\lambda_n^{3/2} (k-2)! \min \{ 1, (2\lambda_n)^{k-2} \}}{\sqrt{2}} \frac{1}{n}$$

by (5.10) and the second inequality in (5.14) with $k$ replaced by $k - 2$. Next,

$$0 \leq R_{k,k-1} \leq \frac{n-m-1}{2n} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 S_{k-2,k-2} \leq \frac{2^{k-2} \lambda_n^{k-2} 1}{(k-2)!} \frac{1}{n}$$

by (5.11), (5.10) and the first inequality in (5.14) with $k$ replaced by $k - 2$ and $l = k - 2$.

We conclude that if we write (5.18) into (5.16), we obtain

$$S_k = \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \frac{\lambda_n^{k-2}}{(k-2)!} + R_{k,k-1} + R_{k,k-1}^2 + \sum_{l=1}^{k-2} R_{k,l},$$

62
where \( R_{k,k-1}^1 + R_{k,k-1}^2 + \sum_{l=1}^{k-2} R_{k,l} = O \left( \frac{1}{n} \right) \) by (5.19), (5.20), (5.17) and the fact that \( \lambda_n \to \lambda \) by (5.9). Thus
\[
S_k = \frac{\lambda_n^k}{k!} + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \frac{\lambda_n^{k-2}}{(k-2)!} + O \left( \frac{1}{n} \right)
\]

(5.21)

Now we return to (5.12), and approximate the product \( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \) in it by \( e^{-\lambda_n} \). Using the definition of \( \lambda_n \) in (5.9) and the expansion formula of the logarithm function the error of the approximation can be written in the form
\[
e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} = \exp \left\{ - \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right) \right\} - \exp \left\{ \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \log \left[ 1 - \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right) \right] \right\}
\]
\[
e^{-\lambda_n} \left( 1 - \exp \left\{ - \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right\} \right)
\]
\[
e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 + \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} - \left[ \exp \left\{ - \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right\} - 1 + \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right] \right)
\]

where the expressions \( \lambda_{n,j} \) are defined as in (5.10). Thus we have
\[
e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} = e^{-\lambda_n} \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 + R_n,
\]

(5.22)

where
\[
R_n = e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} - \left[ \exp \left\{ - \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right\} - 1 + \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right] \right)
\]

and we are going to show that \( R_n = O \left( \frac{1}{n} \right) \).

We are going to bound the sum in the exponent in \( R_n \). Since \( \lambda_n \to \lambda \) by (5.9), there exists a threshold number \( n_0 \) such that for all \( n \geq n_0 \) we have \( \sqrt{2\lambda_n} < \frac{1}{2} \). This with inequality (5.10) yields
\[
\sum_{j=j_0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \leq \lambda_n \left( \frac{2\lambda_n}{n} \right)^{j_0-1} \sum_{j=j_0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{2\lambda_n}{n} \right)^{j-j_0} \leq \lambda_n \left( \frac{2\lambda_n}{n} \right)^{j_0-1} \sum_{j=j_0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{1}{2} \right)^{j-j_0} = 2\lambda_n \left( \frac{2\lambda_n}{n} \right)^{j_0-1}
\]

(5.23)

for all \( n \geq n_0 \). Let us suppose that \( n \) satisfies this condition from now on.

Now we bound \( |R_n| \). First we apply the triangle inequality, then the inequality \( |e^{-x} - 1 + x| \leq \frac{x^2}{2} \) valid for all positive real \( x \) with \( x = \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \), and finally use inequality (5.23)
with \( j_0 = 2 \) and 3. Thus we obtain

\[
|R_n| \leq e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right) + \exp \left\{ -\sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right\} - 1 + \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right) 
\]

\[
\leq e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \sum_{j=3}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} + \frac{1}{2} \left( \sum_{j=2}^{\infty} \frac{1}{j} \lambda_{n,j} \right)^2 \right) 
\]

\[
\leq e^{-\lambda_n} \left( \frac{4\lambda_n^2}{n} + \frac{1}{2} \left( 2\lambda_n \left( \frac{2\lambda_n}{n} \right) \right)^2 \right) = e^{-\lambda_n} 4\lambda_n^2 (\lambda_n + 1) \frac{1}{n}. 
\]

Recalling (5.22) we see that we proved

\[
e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} = e^{-\lambda_n} \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 + O \left( \frac{1}{n} \right). \quad (5.24)
\]

Finally, recalling (5.12) we have

\[
P(\tilde{W}_{n,m} = 0) = \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) = e^{-\lambda_n} - \left( e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right)
\]

for \( k = 0 \),

\[
P(\tilde{W}_{n,m} = 1) = \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) \lambda_n = e^{-\lambda_n} \lambda_n - \left( e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) \lambda_n
\]

for \( k = 1 \), and

\[
P(\tilde{W}_{n,m} = k) = \left( \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) S_k = e^{-\lambda_n} S_k - \left( e^{-\lambda_n} - \prod_{i=m+1}^{n} \frac{i}{n} \right) S_k
\]

for \( k \geq 2 \). We obtain the first assertion of Theorem 5.3.1 if we write (5.21) and (5.24) into these expressions. The second assertion follows from the first and (5.9). ■

### 5.4 Poisson approximation – matching the means

As mentioned at the beginning of this chapter, we shall now approximate the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \) with another Poisson law, namely with the one that has the same mean as \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \). One can easily calculate that in the range of parameters \( n \) and \( m \) for which the Poisson limit theorem of Section 1.2. holds true, the error order of this new approximation, given in the theorem below, is \( 1/n \), which is clearly better than the error order \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) given by Corollary 5.2.1 or Theorem 5.3.1 for the same case. As we shall see, the proof of Theorem 5.4.1 is based on Stein’s method, and heavily uses the fact that the means of the compared probability measures coincide. We note that the argument presented in the proof of Theorem 5.1.2 would not work here.
Theorem 5.4.1 For the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time $\tilde{W}_{n,m}$ with $\lambda' = E\tilde{W}_{n,m} = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{n}{i} - 1 \right)$, we have

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(\tilde{W}_{n,m}), \text{Po}(\lambda'_n)) \leq 8 \left( 1 \wedge \sqrt{\frac{2}{e\lambda'_n}} \right) \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{n-i}{i} \right)^{3/2}.$$ \(5.25\)

Proof. Recalling Section 2.3, we apply the Stein-Chen method for Poisson approximation. By (2.15), we get the following formula:

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(\tilde{W}_{n,m}), \text{Po}(\lambda'_n)) = \sup_{A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+} |E\{\lambda'_n f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) - \tilde{W}_{n,m} f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m})\}|,$$ \(5.26\)

where $f_A$ is the solution to the Stein equation (2.13), and by (2.14), we know that

$$\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}_+} |f_A(k)| \leq 1 \wedge \sqrt{\frac{2}{e\lambda'_n}}.$$ \(5.27\)

Recalling the distributional equalities in (1.1) and (5.8), we introduce

$$W^i_{n,m} := W_{n,m} - X_i, \quad i \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\}$$

and

$$\tilde{W}^i_{n,m} := \tilde{W}_{n,m} - \tilde{X}_i, \quad i \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\}.$$  

Taking an arbitrary $A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+$, the two terms on the right hand side of (5.26) can be written in the form

$$E\left\{ \lambda'_n f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) \right\} = E(\tilde{W}_{n,m})E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} E(\tilde{X}_i)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} kP(\tilde{X}_i = k)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) \right\}$$

by (5.8), and

$$E\left\{ \tilde{W}_{n,m} f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}) \right\} = \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} E\left\{ \tilde{X}_i f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} E\left\{ k f_A(\tilde{W}^i_{n,m} + k) | \tilde{X}_i = k \right\} P(\tilde{X}_i = k)$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{n} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} kP(\tilde{X}_i = k)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}^i_{n,m} + k) \right\}.$$
where we used (5.8) again and the independence of $\tilde{X}_i$ and $\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i$. Putting these together, we get

$$E\{\chi'_{n}f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) - \tilde{W}_{n,m}f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m})\} =$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} kP(\tilde{X}_i = k)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) - f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + k) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} kP(\tilde{X}_i = k)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + X_i) - f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + k) \right\}$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} kP(\tilde{X}_i = k) \left( \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + l) - f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + k)|X_i = l \right\} P(X_i = l) \right)$$

$$= \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} kP(X_i = k + 1)P(X_i = l)E\left\{ f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + l) - f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + k) \right\},$$

where at the last step we used the independence again. Thus by (5.27)

$$|E\{\chi'_{n}f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + 1) - \tilde{W}_{n,m}f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m})\}| \leq$$

$$\leq \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} kP(X_i = k + 1)P(X_i = l)E\left\{ |f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + l) - f_A(\tilde{W}_{n,m}^i + k)| \right\}$$

$$\leq 2 \left( 1 + \sqrt{\frac{2}{e\lambda'_n}} \right) \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} kP(X_i = k + 1)P(X_i = l).$$

Since this inequality holds for each $A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+$, it yields the same upper bound for the supremum of the expectations on left hand side taken over the set of functions $f_A$, $A \subset \mathbb{Z}_+$, so by (5.26), we have

$$d_{TV}(D(\tilde{W}_{n,m}), Po(\lambda'_n)) \leq 2 \left( 1 + \sqrt{\frac{2}{e\lambda'_n}} \right) \sum_{i=m+1}^{\infty} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} kP(X_i = k + 1)P(X_i = l). \quad (5.28)$$

Keeping in mind the infinite series' sums $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} x^{j-1}(1 - x) = 1$, $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} jx^j = \frac{x}{(1-x)^2}$ for any $0 < x < 1$, we start the calculation of the expression.
above:

\[
\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \sum_{l=1 \atop l \neq k}^{\infty} k P(X_i = k + 1) P(X_i = l) = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^k \frac{i}{n} \left[ 1 - \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^{k-1} \frac{i}{n} \right]
\]

\[
= \frac{i}{n} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^k - \left( \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} k \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right)^{2k-1}
\]

\[
= \frac{i}{n} \frac{1 - \frac{i}{n}}{\left[ 1 - (1 - \frac{i}{n}) \right]^2} - \left( \frac{i}{n} \right)^2 \frac{1 - \frac{i}{n}}{\left[ 1 - (1 - \frac{i}{n}) \right]^2 \left[ 1 + (1 - \frac{i}{n}) \right]^2}
\]

\[
= \frac{1 - \frac{i}{n}}{\frac{1}{n}} - \frac{1 - \frac{i}{n}}{(2 - \frac{i}{n})^2}
\]

\[
= \frac{n - i}{i} \frac{n(n - i)}{(2n - i)^2}
\]

\[
= \frac{(n - i)(4n^2 - 4ni + i^2 - ni)}{i(2n - i)^2}
\]

\[
= \frac{(n - i)^2(4n - i)}{i(2n - i)^2} = \left( \frac{n - i}{i} \right)^3 \frac{i^2(4n - i)}{(2n - i)^2(n - i)}.
\]

Now for an arbitrary \(i \in [m + 1, \ldots, n]\) the sequence \(\frac{i^2(4n - i)}{(2n - i)^2(n - i)}\) can be bounded from above by 4. If we use this bound for the triple sum in (5.28), we obtain the theorem. ■
Chapter 6

Compound Poisson approximation

According to our goals set out in the introduction, in this chapter we approximate the distribution of the appropriately centered coupon collector’s waiting time with a compound Poisson measure \( \pi_{\mu,a} \) defined at the end of Section 1.3. Based on the distributional equality in (5.8), we shall apply general results of translated compound Poisson approximation of sums of independent integer valued random variables, which has been studied in a series of papers. Using Stein’s method, [7] and [2] give bounds for the errors of such approximations in total variation distance. Their upper bounds are expressed with the help of the first three moments of the summands \( X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n \) and the critical ingredient \( d_{TV}(D(W_n), D(W_{n+1})) \), where \( W_n = \sum_{j=1}^{n} X_j \).

The expression \( d_{TV}(D(W_n), D(W_{n+1})) \) is usually bounded by the Mineka coupling introduced in Section 2.4, which typically yields a bound of order \( 1/\sqrt{n} \). If the \( X_j \)’s are roughly similar in magnitude, this is comparable to the error in the central limit theorem. However, if the distributions of the \( X_j \) become progressively more spread out as \( j \) increases, then \( \text{Var}W_n \) may grow faster than \( n \), and then \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) is bigger than the ideal order \( O(1/\sqrt{\text{Var}W_n}) \). In fact, this is the situation in the case when we chose \( W_n \) to be the coupon collector’s waiting time.

In the first part of this chapter we shall introduce a new coupling which allows us to improve the bounds obtained by the Mineka coupling in such cases. Then, in the second part of the chapter, with the help of this new coupling, we shall prove \( d_{TV}(D(W_{n,m}), D(W_{n,m+1})) = O(1/\sqrt{\text{Var}W_{n,m}}) \), and therefore that a translated compound Poisson approximation to the collector’s waiting time \( W_{n,m} \), with ideal error rate, can be obtained in all ranges of \( n \) and \( m \) in which a central or Poisson limit theorem can be proved.

6.1 An extension of Mineka’s coupling inequality

We saw in (2.18) that if \( V_r \) is a sum of iid discrete uniform random variables on the finite interval \( \{1, 2, \ldots, 2l-1, 2l\} \) for some \( l > 1 \) integer, then

\[
d_{TV}(D(V_r), D(V_{r+1})) \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2r}},
\]

where \( 1/\sqrt{r} > 1/(l\sqrt{r}) = 1/\sqrt{\text{Var}V_r} \). However, in the following lemma we show that \( d_{TV}(D(V_r), D(V_{r+1})) = 1/\sqrt{\text{Var}V_r} \) can be established, if we use a new coupling instead of
Mineka’s coupling.

Lemma 6.1.1 Let $U_1, U_2, \ldots, U_r, r \geq 2$, be independent identically distributed random variables with discrete uniform distribution on $\{1, 2, \ldots, 2l-1, 2l\}$ for some integer $l \geq 1$. If $V_r = \sum_{j=1}^r U_j$, then

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_r), \mathcal{D}(V_r + 1)) \leq \frac{1}{l \sqrt{r}}.$$ 

Proof. We construct a coupling of $(V_r, V_r + 1)$. Let $U_1$ be an arbitrary random variable of uniform distribution on $\{1, 2, \ldots, 2l\}$. If $U_1 \in \{1, 2, \ldots, 2l-1\}$, then define

$$U'_1 = U_1 + 1 \quad \text{and} \quad U'_j = U_j, \ 2 \leq j \leq r,$$

where $U_1, \ldots, U_r$ are independent; while if $U_1 = 2l$, then put

$$U'_1 = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad U_j = \tilde{U}_j + I_j, \quad U'_j = \tilde{U}_j + l(1 - I_j), \quad 2 \leq j \leq r,$$

where $\tilde{U}_j$ has uniform distribution on $\{1, \ldots, l\}$, $I_j$ takes on the values 0 and 1, each with probability 1/2, and $\tilde{U}_j, I_j, 2 \leq j \leq r$, are independent, also of $U_1$.

Introducing $V_s := \sum_{j=1}^s U_j$ and $V'_s := \sum_{j=1}^s U'_j, s \in \{1, \ldots, r\}$, we see that

$$S_s := (V_s + 1) - V'_s = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{if } U_1 \in \{1, 2, \ldots, 2l-1\} \\ 2l + \sum_{j=2}^s (U_j - U'_j), & \text{if } U_1 = 2l, \end{cases}$$

where

$$U_j - U'_j = \begin{cases} l, & \text{with probability } 1/2, \\ -l, & \text{with probability } 1/2. \end{cases}$$

Thus if $U_1 = 2l$, $(S_s)'_{s=1}^r$ can be regarded as a symmetric random walk that starts from $2l$ in time step one, and then at each subsequent time step increases or decreases by $l$. Define $T$ to be the first time the random walk hits 0, that is

$$T := \inf \{ s \geq 2 : S_s = 0 \} = \inf \left\{ s \geq 2 : \sum_{j=2}^s (U_j - U'_j) = -2l \right\}.$$

By the reflection principle and symmetry,

$$P(T > r|U_1 = 2l) = 1 - P(T \leq r|U_1 = 2l)$$

$$= 1 - P(S_r = 0|U_1 = 2l) - 2P(S_r < 0|U_1 = 2l)$$

$$= 1 - P(S_r = 0|U_1 = 2l) - P(S_r < 0|U_1 = 2l) - P(S_r > 4|U_1 = 2l)$$

$$= \sum_{k=1}^4 P(S_r = kl|U_1 = 2l) \leq 2 \max_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} P(S_r = kl|U_1 = 2l),$$

and by Lemma 4.7 of Barbour and Xia [7], we have

$$\max_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} P(S_r = kl|U_1 = 2l) \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2} \sqrt{r - 1}},$$

70
thus
\[ P(T > r | U_1 = 2l) \leq \frac{2}{\sqrt{r}}. \]  
(6.1)

Now for \( j, s \in \{1, \ldots, r\} \) put
\[ U''_j := \begin{cases} U'_j, & \text{if } 1 \leq j \leq T, \\ U_j, & j > T, \end{cases} \quad \text{and} \quad V''_s := \sum_{j=1}^{s} U''_j. \]

Of course \((V''_s)_{s=1}^r, (V''_s r_{s=1}^r)\) all have the same distribution, thus \((V''_r, V_r + 1)\) is a coupling of \((V_r, V_r + 1)\), therefore
\[ d_{TV}(V_r, V_r + 1) \leq P(V_r + 1 \neq V''_r) = P(T > r) \]
by the coupling inequality. Since
\[ P(T > r) = P(U_1 = 2l)P(T > r | U_1 = 2l) \leq \frac{1}{l\sqrt{r}} \]
by (6.1), the proof is complete. ■

Now we show how the result of Lemma 6.1.1 concerning sums of iid uniform random variables can be used to obtain similar results for sums of arbitrary integer valued random variables. The idea is to embed the uniform random variables in the ones we want to prove the result for.

**Proposition 6.1.1** If \( X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n, n \geq 2, \) are independent integer valued random variables and \( W = \sum_{j=1}^{n} X_n \), then
\[ d_{TV}(D(W), D(W + 1)) \leq \frac{4}{l\sqrt{np}} + \frac{8d_n}{np}, \]
where \( l \in \{2, 4, 6, \ldots\} \) and \( p \leq \min\{P(X_j = k) : k = 1, \ldots, l, j = 1, \ldots, n\} \) are arbitrary and \( d_n = d_{TV}(D(X_n), D(X_n + 1)) \).

**Proof.** We write each of the variables \( X_1, \ldots, X_n \) in the form
\[ X_j = I_j U_j + (1 - I_j) R_j, \quad j = 1, \ldots, n, \]  
(6.2)
where \( I_j, U_j \) and \( R_j, j = 1, \ldots, n \), are all independent random variables defined on a common probability space, and for each \( j = 1, \ldots, n \): \( U_j \) has discrete uniform distribution on \{1, 2, \ldots, l\} for some even integer \( l \); \( I_j \) is a Bernoulli random variable with parameter \( lp \), where \( p \leq \min\{P(X_j = k) : k = 1, \ldots, l, j = 1, \ldots, n\} \) is fixed; and
\[ P(R_j = k) = \begin{cases} \frac{P(X_j = k)}{1-lp}, & 1 \leq k \leq l, \\ \frac{P(X_j = k)}{1-lp}, & \text{otherwise}, \quad k \in \mathbb{Z}. \end{cases} \]
Since $\mathcal{D}(X_j|I_j = 1) = \mathcal{D}(U_j)$ and $\mathcal{D}(X_j|I_j = 0) = \mathcal{D}(R_j)$, for any $\delta_1, \ldots, \delta_{n-1} \in \{0, 1\}$ and $\rho_1, \ldots, \rho_{n-1} \in \mathbb{Z}$ we have

$$\mathcal{D}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n-1} X_j|I_j = \delta_j, R_j = \rho_j, j = 1, \ldots, n-1\right) = \mathcal{D}(V_r + \rho),$$

where $r = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \delta_j$, $V_r = \sum_{j=1}^{r} U'_j$, where the $U'_j$ are independent copies of $U_1$, and are independent of everything else, and $\rho = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} (1 - \delta_j)\rho_j$.

Now we apply the inequality

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(Z_1), \mathcal{D}(Z_2)) \leq E\{d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(Z_1|Z_3), \mathcal{D}(Z_2|Z_3))\} \tag{6.3}$$

true for any random elements $Z_1, Z_2$ and $Z_3$ defined on the same probability space. We obtain

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1)) \leq E\left(\mathcal{D}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} X_j|I_j, R_j, j = 1, \ldots, n-1\right), \mathcal{D}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} X_j + 1|I_j, R_j, j = 1, \ldots, n-1\right)\right)$$

$$= E\{d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n + R|T, R), \mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n + R + 1|T, R))\},$$

where $T = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} I_j$ and $R = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} (1 - I_j)R_j$ are independent of $(U'_j, j \geq 1)$ and of $X_n$. Hence

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1)) \leq E\{d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n|T), \mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n + 1|T))\}, \tag{6.4}$$

since total variation distance is invariant under translation.

Now, since $T, X_n$ and $(U'_j, j \geq 1)$ are independent, we have

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n|T = t), \mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n + 1|T = t))$$

$$\leq \min\{d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_t), \mathcal{D}(V_t + 1)), d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(X_n), \mathcal{D}(X_n + 1))\},$$

and Lemma 6.1.1 provides the bound

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_t), \mathcal{D}(V_t + 1)) \leq f(t) := \begin{cases} \frac{2}{l\sqrt{T}}, & \text{if } t > 0, \\ 1, & \text{if } t = 0. \end{cases}$$

Writing $d_n = d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(X_n), \mathcal{D}(X_n + 1))$ we thus obtain from (6.4) that

$$d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1)) \leq E\{d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n|T), \mathcal{D}(V_T + X_n + 1|T))\}$$

$$\leq E\{\min[f(T); d_n]\}$$

$$\leq E\left(\frac{2}{l\sqrt{T}} \left| T \geq \frac{ET}{2}\right\} \mathcal{P}\left(T \geq \frac{ET}{2}\right) + d_n \mathcal{P}\left(T < \frac{ET}{2}\right)\right)$$

$$\leq \frac{2\sqrt{2}}{l\sqrt{ET}} + d_n \mathcal{P}\left(T < \frac{ET}{2}\right).$$

72
Since $T$ has distribution $\text{Bin}(n-1, lp)$, $\mathbb{E}T = (n-1)lp \geq \frac{1}{2}nlp$, and by Chebishev’s inequality
\[ P \left( T < \frac{\mathbb{E}T}{2} \right) \leq P \left( |T - \mathbb{E}T| > \frac{\mathbb{E}T}{2} \right) \leq \frac{4\text{Var}T}{(\mathbb{E}T)^2} \leq \frac{4}{(n-1)lp} \leq \frac{8}{nlp}, \]
thus
\[ d_{\text{TV}}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1)) \leq \frac{4}{l\sqrt{nlp}} + \frac{8d_n}{nlp}. \tag{6.5} \]

\begin{remark}
Since total variation distance is invariant under translation, there is no loss of generality in supposing that the $l$-intervals begin at 1.
\end{remark}

\begin{remark}
The choice of $(p, l)$ depends very much on the problem.
\end{remark}

The constants in the upper bound of Proposition 6.1.1 can be improved by refining the method proposed in the proof. One could embed not one, but many uniform random variables in the $X_j$-s by splitting the whole line into the $l$-blocks $\{(m-1)l, \ldots, ml\}_{m \in \mathbb{Z}}$ and defining a uniform variable corresponding to each block. Thus one could use potential overlaps from the whole distribution and not just the interval $\{1, \ldots, l\}$, when bounding $d_{\text{TV}}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1))$.

More precisely, each $X_j$, $j = 1, \ldots, n$, can be given in the form
\[ X_j = I_{j0}R_j + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} I_{ji}(U_{ji} + (i - 1)l), \]
where all random variables in the decompositions are defined on a common probability space, and for each $j = 1, \ldots, n$ the following hold true: $U_{ji}$ has discrete uniform distribution on $\{1, \ldots, l\}$, $i = 1, 2, \ldots$, for some fixed even integer $l$; $I_{j0} \sim \text{Bernoulli}(1 - \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} lp_i)$, $I_{ji} \sim \text{Bernoulli}(lp_i)$, where $p_i \leq \min\{\mathbb{P}(X_j = k) : k = (i-1)l, \ldots, il, j = 1, \ldots, n\}$ is fixed, $i = 1, 2, \ldots$, and these Bernoulli variables depend on each other in a way that for each outcome exactly one of them is 1 and the rest are 0; all the other variables in the decompositions are independent of each other and of the $I_{ij}$-s; and $R_j$ is defined to make the distribution of the decomposition equal the distribution of $X_j$.

Then, to bound $d_{\text{TV}}(\mathcal{D}(W), \mathcal{D}(W + 1))$ we would use (6.3), conditioning on all the $I_{ji}$-s and $R_j$-s, which would give us (6.4) with $T = \sum_{j=1}^{n-1} \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} I_{ji}$. In this case $\mathbb{E}T = (n-1)l \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} p_i$ and $\text{Var}T = (n-1)l(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} p_i)(1 - l \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} p_i)$, hence we would obtain (6.5) with $p$ replaced by $\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} p_i$. 73
6.2 Compound Poisson approximation in the range of the central and Poisson limit theorems

We return to the coupon collector’s problem. Taking advantage of the decomposition in (5.8), we apply a theorem of Barbour and Xia [7] on translated compound Poisson approximation in total variation distance to the distributions of sums of independent integer valued random variables. One of the elements in their approximation error is (almost) $d_{TV}(D(W_{n,m}), D(W_{n,m} + 1))$, to bound which we invoke our proposition of the previous section. Recalling that in Section 1.3, for $\mu, a > 0$, we defined the compound Poisson distribution $\pi_{\mu,a}$ to be the distribution of $Z_1 + 2Z_2$, where $Z_1 \sim \text{Po}(\mu)$ and $Z_2 \sim \text{Po}(a/2)$ are independent, we have the following result:

**Theorem 6.2.1** For any fixed $n \geq 2$ and $2 \leq m \leq n - 4$, if

$$\mu = \sigma_n^2 - 2\langle \sigma_n^2 - \mu_n \rangle,$$

$$a = \langle \sigma_n^2 - \mu_n \rangle$$

and

$$c = \lfloor \sigma_n^2 - \mu_n \rfloor,$$

where $\langle x \rangle$ and $\lfloor x \rfloor$ denote the fractional and integer part of $x$ respectively, then there exists a positive constant $C$ such that

$$d_{TV}(D(W_{n,m} + c), \pi_{\mu,a}) \leq C \frac{\sigma_n}{\sqrt{n}} \left( \frac{\lfloor \sigma_n^2 - \mu_n - (n - m) \rfloor}{\sigma_n^2} + \frac{(n - m)^2}{nm} \right).$$

(6.7)

**Remark 6.2.1** We recall one of the Baum–Billingsley theorems from Section 1.2: if $m = m \in \{0, 1, \ldots, n - 1\}$ is an integer that depends on $n$ in such a way that

$$m \to \infty \quad \text{and} \quad \frac{n - m}{\sqrt{n}} \to \infty \quad \text{as} \quad n \to \infty,$$

then $W_{n,m} : = (W_{n,m} - EW_{n,m})/\sqrt{\text{Var}W_{n,m}}$ has asymptotically standard normal distribution. This limit theorem was refined in Chapter 4 by showing that

$$d_K(D(W_{n,m}), N(0,1)) \leq C \frac{n}{m} \frac{1}{\sigma_n},$$

where $C = 9.257$. One can deduce that the same or better order of approximation is obtained in the discrete approximation given in our theorem, than with normal approximation, and now with the error measured with respect to the much stronger total variation distance.

**Remark 6.2.2** Note that, with these parameters, $\pi_{\mu,a}$ has mean $\mu + a = \sigma_n^2 - \langle \sigma_n^2 - \mu_n \rangle = \mu_n + c$ and variance $\mu + 2a = \sigma_n^2$. 

74
Remark 6.2.3 We can express the bound of Theorem 6.2.1 more intuitively with the help of the asymptotic formulae given by Baum and Billingsley in [8] for the variance of the waiting time: if \( n \to \infty \), then

\[
\frac{m}{n} \to 0, \quad \frac{m}{n} \to c, c \in (0, 1), \quad \frac{m}{n} \to 1, \quad \Rightarrow \begin{cases} \sigma_n^2 \sim \frac{n^2}{m} \\
^2 \sim \gamma n, \\
^2 \sim \frac{1}{2} (n-m)^2, \end{cases}
\]

where \( \gamma = (1 - c + c \log c)/c \). In the latter case we distinguish two subcases: the case when \( \liminf_{n,m \to \infty} [\sigma_n^2 - \mu_n - (n-m)] > 1 \) and when \( \limsup_{n,m \to \infty} [\sigma_n^2 - \mu_n - (n-m)] < 1 \). We shall refer to the four categories above as "small", "medium", "large" and "very large" m. By these formulae, (6.7) is equivalent to

\[
d_{TV}\left(\mathcal{D}\left(W_{n,m} + c\right), \pi_{\mu,a}\right) = \begin{cases} O\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{m}}\right), & \text{in the "small" m case;} \\
\frac{1}{\sqrt{m}}, & \text{in the "medium" m case;} \\
\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}, & \text{in the "large" m case;} \\
O\left(\frac{n-m}{n}\right), & \text{in the "very large" m case.} \end{cases}
\] (6.8)

Proof of Theorem 6.2.1. We apply Theorem 4.3 in [7], which states that if \( Z_j, j = 1, \ldots, r \), are independent integer valued random variables with \( E|Z_j|^3 < \infty \), \( W = \sum_{j=1}^r Z_j \), and we define

\[
e_c(W) = \begin{cases} 1, & \text{if } W + c \geq 0 \text{ almost surely;} \\
0, & \text{otherwise;} \end{cases}
\]

\[
\psi_j := E|Z_j(Z_j - 1)(Z_j - 2)| + |EZ_j|E|Z_j(Z_j - 1)| + 2E|Z_j||\text{Var}Z_j - EZ_j|,
\]

\[
d_+ := \max_{1 \leq i \leq r} \left\{ d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W_i), \mathcal{D}(W_i + 1)) \right\}, \text{ where } W_i := W - Z_i,
\]

then with \( \mu = \text{Var}W - 2(\text{Var}W - EW), a = (\text{Var}W - EW) \) and \( c = |\text{Var}W - EW| \),

\[
d_{TV}\left(\mathcal{D}\left(W + c\right), \pi_{\mu,a}\right) \leq \frac{2e_c(W) + 2\left[|\text{Var}W - EW| + \sum_{j=1}^r \psi_j\right] d_+}{\text{Var}W}. \] (6.9)

We apply this theorem with \( Z_j = X_j - 1, j \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\} \), for the \( X_j \) given in (5.8), in order to approximate the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time \( \bar{W}_{n,m} := \sum_{j=m+1}^{n}[X_j - 1] \), and then show that the upper bound in (6.9) is not greater than the right hand side of (6.7). Then, since the two measures compared in (6.9) are the same for \( W = \bar{W}_{n,m} \) and \( W = W_{n,m} = \bar{W}_{n,m} + n - m \), the theorem for \( W_{n,m} \) follows immediately.

To do so, for given \( n \geq 2, 2 \leq m \leq n - 4 \) and \( j \in \{m+1, \ldots, n\} \), we bound \( \psi_j \) and \( d_+ \) as defined above.

For \( X \), a random variable that has geometric distribution with parameter \( p \), we have

\[
E X = \frac{1}{p}, \quad EX^2 = \frac{2 - p}{p^2}, \quad EX^3 = \frac{p^2 - 6p + 6}{p^3}, \quad \text{and } \text{Var}X = \frac{1 - p}{p^2}.
\]
Thus for \( Z = X - 1 \), one can easily calculate
\[
\psi := \mathbb{E}[Z(Z - 1)(Z - 2)] + \mathbb{E}Z|\mathbb{E}[Z(Z - 1)] + 2\mathbb{E}Z||\text{Var}Z - \mathbb{E}Z|
\]
\[
= \mathbb{E}\{X^3 - 6X^2 + 11X - 6\} + \mathbb{E}\{X - 1\}\mathbb{E}\{X^2 - 3X + 2\} + 2\mathbb{E}\{X - 1\}|\text{Var}X - \mathbb{E}X + 1|
\]
\[
= \frac{10(1 - p)^3}{p^2},
\]
so \( \psi_j = 10\left(\frac{n}{j} - 1\right)^3 \). If we add the \( \psi_j \) together, we obtain
\[
\sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \psi_j = \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \frac{10(1 - \frac{j}{n})^3}{\left(\frac{j}{n}\right)^3} \leq 10 \frac{(n - m)^2}{nm} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \frac{n(n-j)}{j^2} = 10 \frac{(n - m)^2}{nm} \sigma_n^2. \quad (6.10)
\]

Next, we notice that \( e_c(W_{n,m}) = 0 \) almost surely. Indeed, \( 0 \leq \sigma_n^2 - \mathbb{E}W_{n,m} \leq \sigma_n^2 \), because for each \( X_j \) geometric random variable of parameter \( j/n \) we have \( \text{Var}X_j - \mathbb{E}(X_j - 1) = \left(\frac{1-j/n}{1/(j/n)}\right)^2 = \frac{(1-j/n)^2}{j/n} = \text{Var}_X \).

Now combining the bound in (6.10) with inequality (6.9) applied to the \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \) waiting time, we obtain
\[
d_{TV}\left(\mathcal{D}\left(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + \tilde{\epsilon}\right), \pi_{\tilde{\mu_{\tilde{\lambda}}}n}\right) \leq 20 \left( \frac{\alpha_n^2 - \mu_n - (n - m)}{\sigma_n^2} \right) + \frac{(n - m)^2}{nm} d_+ \quad (6.11)
\]
where \( \tilde{\epsilon}, \tilde{\mu} \) and \( \tilde{\lambda} \) are defined by the formulae in (6.6) with \( W_{n,m} \) replaced with \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \).

Before turning to the approximation of \( d_+ \), we bound \( \sigma_n^2 \). We see that
\[
\sigma_n^2 = n \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \frac{n-j}{j^2} \leq \frac{n}{(m+1)^2} \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} (n-j) = \frac{n(n-m)(n-m-1)}{2(m+1)^2},
\]
also,
\[
\sigma_n^2 = n \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \frac{n-j}{j^2} \leq n(n-m-1) \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x^2} dx \leq \frac{n(n-m-1)}{m},
\]
thus
\[
\sigma_n^2 \leq n(n-m-1) \min \left\{ \frac{n-m}{2(m+1)^2}, \frac{1}{m} \right\} \quad (6.12)
\]

Now for \( d_+ \), by an inequality of Mattner and Roos [21] we have
\[
d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W_i), \mathcal{D}(W_i + 1)) \leq \sqrt{\frac{2}{n}} \left( \sum_{j=m+1, j \neq i}^{n} \left[ 1 - d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(X_j), \mathcal{D}(X_j + 1)) \right] \right)^{-\frac{1}{2}},
\]
and since \( d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(X_j), \mathcal{D}(X_j + 1)) \) is equal to
\[
\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} |P(X_j = k) - P(X_j = k - 1)| = \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{j}{n} + \left( \frac{j}{n} \right)^2 \sum_{k=2}^{\infty} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right)^{-k} \right) = \frac{j}{n}, \quad (6.13)
\]
we obtain
\[ d_+ \leq \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \left( \sum_{j=m+1}^{n} \left( 1 - \frac{j}{n} \right) - \max_{m+1 \leq i \leq n} \left( 1 - \frac{i}{n} \right) \right)^{-\frac{1}{2}} = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \frac{\sqrt{n}}{(n - m - 1) (n - m - 2)}. \]
It follows from this and (6.12) that for any \( K > 0 \)
\[ d_+ \leq \frac{2 K}{\sqrt{\pi} \sigma_n}, \quad \text{if} \quad \frac{n}{K} \leq m \leq n - 4. \tag{6.14} \]
Putting this bound into (6.11) gives a result which, when compared to (6.7), has an extra factor \( K \geq n/m \). Thus it is of inferior order if \( m \ll n \). To prove the theorem for such values of \( m \), we need to use our proposition to bound \( d_+ \).
Let us assume that \( 2 \leq m \leq \frac{n}{2} \). If we apply the Proposition to the random variables \( \{X_j, j = m + 1, \ldots, 2m, j \neq i\}, i \in \{m + 1, \ldots, 2m\} \) fixed, with
\[ l = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
\left\lfloor \frac{n}{m} \right\rfloor, & \text{if} \left\lfloor \frac{n}{m} \right\rfloor \text{ is even,} \\
\left\lfloor \frac{n}{m} \right\rfloor - 1, & \text{if} \left\lfloor \frac{n}{m} \right\rfloor \text{ is odd,}
\end{array} \right. \quad \text{and} \quad p = \left( 1 - \frac{2m}{n} \right) \frac{m}{n}, \]
we obtain
\[ d_{TV} \left\{ \mathcal{D} \left( \sum_{j=m+1, j \neq i}^{2m} X_j \right), \mathcal{D} \left( \sum_{j=m+1, j \neq i}^{2m} X_j + 1 \right) \right\} \leq \frac{2}{l \sqrt{(m-1)lp}} + \frac{8d}{(m-1)lp}, \tag{6.15} \]
where
\[ d = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
d_{TV} \{\mathcal{D}(X_{2m}), \mathcal{D}(X_{2m} + 1)\} = \frac{2m}{n}, & \text{if} \ i \neq 2m, \\
d_{TV} \{\mathcal{D}(X_{2m-1}), \mathcal{D}(X_{2m-1} + 1)\} = \frac{2m-1}{n}, & \text{if} \ i = 2m
\end{array} \right. \]
by (6.13). For any \( i \in \{m + 1, \ldots, 2m\} \) we have
\[ d \leq \frac{2m}{n} \quad \text{and} \quad l \geq \frac{n}{2m}, \]
since \( \lfloor x \rfloor - 1 \geq \frac{x}{2}, \) if \( x \geq 2, \) and
\[ lp \geq \frac{n}{2m} \left( 1 - \frac{2m}{n} \right) \frac{n}{m} \geq e^{-2}, \]
because \( (1 - x)^2 \) decreases as \( x \) increases in \((0,1),\) and its limit at 0 is \( e^{-2} \). Now putting the bounds above together in (6.15) yields
\[ d_+ = \max_{i \in \{m+1, \ldots, 2m\}} d_{TV} \left\{ \mathcal{D} \left( \sum_{j=m+1, j \neq i}^{2m} X_j \right), \mathcal{D} \left( \sum_{j=m+1, j \neq i}^{2m} X_j + 1 \right) \right\} \]
\[ \leq 8 \sqrt{2} e \frac{m}{\sqrt{n} \sqrt{m-1n}} + 32 e^2 \frac{m}{(m-1)n} \leq 16 e \frac{\sqrt{m}}{n} + 64 e^2 \frac{1}{n} \leq (16e + 64e^2) \frac{\sqrt{m}}{n}, \]
where the last two inequalities hold for \( m \geq 2 \). By (6.12), \( \frac{\sqrt{m}}{n} \leq \frac{1}{\sigma_n}, \) thus we have
\[ d_+ \leq (16e + 64e^2) \frac{1}{\sigma_n}, \quad \text{if} \ 2 \leq m \leq \frac{n}{2}. \]
This and (6.14) with \( K = 2 \) substituted into (6.11) yield the theorem. ■
Chapter 7

Poisson–Charlier expansions

In the final chapter of the thesis we approximate the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time \( \widetilde{W}_{n,m} = W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) with Poisson–Charlier signed measures in total variation distance. To do so, we shall apply a characteristic function technique proposed in [6]. Throughout the chapter \( C \) and \( C_R \) denote positive constants, not necessarily the same ones at different occurrences, the first one is always a universal constant, while the latter one depends on \( R \).

Let \( \mu = D(\widetilde{W}_{n,m} + c) \), where

\[
c = [\text{Var}\widetilde{W}_{n,m} - \text{E}\widetilde{W}_{n,m}] = [\sigma_n^2 - \mu_n - (n - m)] = \left\lfloor \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^2 \right\rfloor.
\]

Recalling the distributional equality (5.8), we see that since the characteristic function of the geometric distribution with success probability \( p \in (0, 1) \) is \( e^{it}/(1 - 1-p(e^{it} - 1)) \), the Fourier–Stieltjes transform of \( \mu \) is

\[
\phi(t) := \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{itx} d\mu(x) = \prod_{k=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{e^{it}}{1 - \frac{n-k}{k}(e^{it} - 1)} \right) e^{ite} = \exp \left\{- \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left(1 - \frac{n-k}{k}(e^{it} - 1)\right) e^{ite} \right\}. \tag{7.1}
\]

Introducing the new variable \( w = w_t = e^{it} - 1 \) and the sequences

\[
a_{n,j} := \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^j, \quad j = 1, 2, \ldots, \tag{7.2}
\]

we write \( \phi(t) \) in the form

\[
\phi(t) = \exp \left\{- \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left(1 - \frac{n-k}{k}w \right) + [a_{n,2}] \log(1 + w) \right\}.
\]

79
Assuming $|t| \leq m/n$, for any $k = m + 1, \ldots, n - 1$ we have
\[
\frac{n-k}{k} |w| = \frac{n-k}{k} |e^{it} - 1| \leq \frac{n-m-1}{m+1} |e^{it} - 1| \leq \frac{n-m-1}{m+1} |t| \leq 1,
\]
which together with $|w| = |e^{it} - 1| \leq |t| \leq 1$ allows us to expand the logarithmic expressions in $\phi(t)$, therefore
\[
\phi(t) = \exp \left\{ \sum_{r=1}^{\infty} \left( a_{n,r} + (-1)^{r+1} [a_{n,2}] \right) \frac{w^r}{r} \right\}, \quad |t| \leq \frac{m}{n}.
\]
We note that $a_{n,1} = \mu_n - (n - m)$ and $a_{n,2} = \sigma_n^2 - [\mu_n - (n - m)]$, hence the line above can be rewritten as
\[
\phi(t) = \chi(t) \exp \{h(w)\}, \quad |t| \leq \frac{m}{n}, \quad (7.3)
\]
where
\[
\chi(t) = \exp \{ \sigma_n^2 (e^{it} - 1) \} \quad (7.4)
\]
is the characteristic function of the Poisson distribution with parameter $\sigma_n^2$, and
\[
h(w) = -\left( a_{n,2} - [a_{n,2}] \right) w + \left( a_{n,2} - [a_{n,2}] \right) \frac{w^2}{2} + \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} \left( a_{n,r} + (-1)^{r+1} [a_{n,2}] \right) \frac{w^r}{r}. \quad (7.5)
\]
Now we fix an integer $R \geq 3$, and modify the function $\exp \{h(w)\}$ in (7.3) in two steps, each time replacing a certain expression of the previous function with the first $R$ terms of its series expansion around 0:
\[
\exp \{h(w)\} \approx \exp \{h_R(w)\} \approx H_R(w), \quad (7.6)
\]
where
\[
h_R(w) = -\left( a_{n,2} - [a_{n,2}] \right) w + \left( a_{n,2} - [a_{n,2}] \right) \frac{w^2}{2} + \sum_{r=3}^{R} \left( a_{n,r} + (-1)^{r+1} [a_{n,2}] \right) \frac{w^r}{r}. \quad (7.7)
\]
and
\[
H_R(w) = \sum_{l=0}^{R} \frac{h_R^{(l)}(w)}{l!}. \quad (7.8)
\]
We approximate the distribution $\mu = D(W_{n,m} + c)$ with $\nu_R$, which we define to be the finite signed measure on the nonnegative integers whose characteristic function is
\[
\psi(t) = \chi(t) H_R(e^{it} - 1), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}. \quad (7.9)
\]
Since $H_R(e^{it} - 1)$ is a polynomial of $e^{it} - 1$ of the form $\sum_{r=0}^{R^2} \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)} (e^{it} - 1)^r$, where the $\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}$ coefficients all depend on $n$ and $m$, it follows that $\nu_R = \nu_R(\sigma_n^2, \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(R^2)})$ is a Poisson–Charlier signed measure, which, according to (1.4), is defined by
\[
\nu_R\{j\} = Po(\sigma_n^2)\{j\} \left( 1 + \sum_{r=1}^{R^2} (-1)^{r+1} \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)} C_r(j, \sigma_n^2) \right), \quad j \in \mathbb{N}, \quad (7.10)
\]
where $C_r(j, \sigma_n^2)$ denotes the $r$-th Charlier polynomial given in (1.5).
Theorem 7.0.1 We assume $a_{n,2} > 1$. For an arbitrary integer $R \geq 3$ there exist threshold numbers $m_R$ and $n_R$ depending on $R$ such that if $m \geq m_R$ and $n \geq n_R$, then

$$\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu_R\{k\}| \leq C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, \quad \text{if} \quad m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1,$$

and

$$\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu_R\{k\}| \leq C_R \frac{(\sqrt{n})^{R-2}}{(n-m)^{R-1}}, \quad \text{if} \quad m \geq \frac{n}{2}.$$

Before embarking on the proof of the theorem, we prove a sequence of propositions, which we shall need later.

Proposition 7.0.1 Assume $1 \leq m \leq n - 1$ and $n - m \geq 2$.

If $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, then

$$\frac{1}{20} \frac{n^2}{m} \leq \sigma_n^2 \leq \frac{n^2}{m}. \quad (7.11)$$

If $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, then

$$\frac{1}{24} \frac{(n-m)^2}{n} \leq \sigma_n^2 \leq 2 \frac{(n-m)^2}{n}. \quad (7.12)$$

Proof. First we prove the upper bounds. Since the terms in the sum $\sigma_n^2 = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2}$ decrease as $k$ increases, we have the bound

$$\sigma_n^2 \leq \int_{m}^{n} \frac{n(n-x)}{x^2} \, dx = n^2 \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x^2} \, dx - n \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x} \, dx = n \left( \frac{n}{m} - 1 - \log \frac{n}{m} \right).$$

Thus we see that $\frac{n^2}{m}$ is always an upper bound for $\sigma_n^2$. However, if $\frac{n}{m} \leq 2$, one can apply the inequality $\log x \geq x - 1 - \frac{(x-1)^2}{2}$ with $x = \frac{n}{m}$ to obtain

$$\sigma_n^2 \leq n \frac{1}{2} \left( \frac{n-m}{m} \right)^2 \leq 2 \frac{(n-m)^2}{n},$$

where at the last inequality we used the assumption $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$.

The proof of the lower bounds is similar. Again, we use the fact that the terms in the sum $\sigma_n^2 = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2}$ decrease as $k$ increases to obtain

$$\sigma_n^2 \geq \int_{m+1}^{n} \frac{n(n-x)}{x^2} \, dx = n^2 \int_{m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{x^2} \, dx - n \int_{m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{x} \, dx = n \left( \frac{n}{m+1} - 1 - \log \frac{n}{m+1} \right).$$

Now if $\frac{n}{m+1} \geq 2$, then by the inequality $1 + \log x \leq \frac{1+\log 2}{2} x$, $x \geq 2$, with $x = \frac{n}{m+1}$,

$$\sigma_n^2 \geq n \left( \frac{n}{m+1} - 1 - \log \frac{n}{m+1} \right) \geq \left( 1 - \frac{1+\log 2}{2} \right) \frac{n^2}{m+1} \geq \frac{1}{10 m + 1} \geq \frac{1}{20 m}.$$
where we also used $m + 1 \leq 2m$. If $\frac{n}{m+1} \leq 2$, we can apply the inequality $\log x \leq (x-1) - \frac{(x-1)^2}{2} + \frac{(x-1)^3}{3}$, $0 \leq x \leq 2$, and $\frac{n}{2} - 1 \leq m \leq n - 1$, which yield

$$
\sigma^2_n \geq n \left( \frac{n}{m+1} - 1 - \log \frac{n}{m+1} \right) \geq n \left( \frac{n}{m+1} - 1 \right)^2 \left( \frac{5}{6} - \frac{1}{3} \frac{n}{m+1} \right)
\geq \frac{1}{6} n \left( \frac{n-m-1}{m+1} \right)^2 \geq \frac{1}{6} \frac{(n-m-1)^2}{n} = \frac{1}{6} \frac{(n-m)^2}{n} \left( \frac{n-m}{n-m} \right)^2 \geq \frac{1}{24} \frac{(n-m)^2}{n},
$$

where at the last inequality we used the fact that the function $(x-1)/x$ is increasing in $x$ with $x = n - m \geq 2$. ■

### Proposition 7.0.2
We fix an arbitrary integer $R \geq 3$, and define

$$t_0 := \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \sqrt{\pi R \log \sqrt{m}}. \quad (7.13)$$

There exists a threshold number $m_R$ depending on $R$ such that if $m \geq m_R$, then

$$t_0 \leq \frac{1}{4} \frac{m}{n} \wedge \frac{m^{2/3}}{n}, \quad \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1. \quad (7.14)$$

There exists a threshold number $n_R$ depending on $R$ such that if $n \geq n_R$ and $m$ is such that

$$\sqrt{24 \pi R} \sqrt{\frac{n \log \sqrt{n}}{n-m}} \leq \frac{1}{8}, \quad (7.15)$$

then

$$t_0 \leq \frac{1}{4} \frac{m}{n} \wedge \frac{n^{2/3}}{n-m}, \quad \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}. \quad (7.16)$$

**Proof.** First, if $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, then by (7.11) in Proposition 7.0.1,

$$t_0 \leq \sqrt{20 \pi R} \sqrt{\frac{m \log \sqrt{m}}{n}}. \quad (7.17)$$

Thus we see that (7.14) holds true if $m$ is greater than some threshold number depending on $R$.

Next, if $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, then by (7.12) of Proposition 7.0.1, we have

$$t_0 \leq \sqrt{24 \pi R} \sqrt{\frac{n \log \sqrt{n}}{n-m}}. \quad (7.18)$$

where the bounding sequence is less than both $n^{2/3}/(n-m)$ for all large enough $n$, depending on $R$, and since $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, assumption (7.15) implies $t_0 \leq \frac{1}{4} \frac{m}{n}$. Therefore we also have (7.16). ■
Proposition 7.0.3 For $a_{n,2}$ defined in (7.2) we have

$$\frac{(n - m - 1)^3}{3n^2} \leq a_{n,2} \leq \frac{(n - m)^3}{m^2} \quad (7.19)$$

For $a_{n,j}$, with $j = 2, 3, \ldots$, also defined in (7.2) we have

$$a_{n,j} \leq 2^j \frac{n!}{m!} \quad \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1, \quad \text{and} \quad a_{n,j} \leq 2^j \frac{(n - m)^j}{n!} \quad \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2} - 1. \quad (7.20)$$

Proof. Since $a_{n,2} = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2}$, the first assertion follows from

$$\frac{(n - m)(n - m - \frac{1}{2})(n - m - 1)}{3n^2} = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{(n-k)^2}{n^2} \leq a_{n,2} \leq (n-m)\frac{(n-m-1)^2}{(m+1)^2}. \quad (7.21)$$

For any $j = 2, 3, \ldots$,

$$a_{n,j} \leq \int_{m}^{n} \left( \frac{n}{k} - 1 \right)^j \, dk = \int_{m}^{n} \sum_{l=0}^{j} (-1)^l \frac{j!}{l!} \left( \frac{n}{k} \right)^{j-l} \, dk \leq \sum_{l=0}^{j} \frac{j!}{l!} \int_{m}^{n} \left( \frac{n}{k} \right)^{j-l} \, dk \leq 2^j \frac{n^j}{m^{j-1}}. \quad (7.22)$$

The approximation applied at the second inequality in the display above is quite gross in the case when $m$ is close to $n$. In this case, with the help of Proposition 7.0.1, one is able to prove the following better upper bound for $a_{n,j}$: if $m \geq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, then

$$a_{n,j} = \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \left( \frac{n-k}{k} \right)^j \leq \frac{(n-m-1)^{j-1}}{(m+1)^{j-2}n} \sigma^2_n \leq 2 \frac{(n-m)^{j+1}}{(m+1)^{j-2}n^2} \leq 2^j \frac{(n-m)^{j+1}}{n^j}. \quad (7.23)$$

Proof of Theorem 7.0.1. First of all we note that by (7.19), the assumption $a_{n,2} > 1$ implies (7.15) for all $n$ that is greater than some threshold number depending on $R$. Let $m_R$ and $n_R$ be positive integers at least as big as the threshold numbers given by Proposition 7.0.2, and such that (7.15) holds true for all $m \geq m_R$ and $n \geq n_R$. We fix an integer $R \geq 3$, as well as integers $m \geq m_R$ and $n \geq n_R$.

We shall apply Theorem 2.2.1 with the measures $\mu$ and $\nu_R$ and the constant $t_0$ given above. Recalling the decompositions of the characteristic functions corresponding to $\mu$ and $\nu_R$ in (7.3) and (7.9), we now give upper bounds for the differences $|\exp\{h(e^{it} - 1)\} - H_R(e^{it} - 1)|$, $|t| \leq t_0$, and $|\phi(t) - \psi(t)|$, $t_0 < |t| \leq \pi$, that have the form required by the theorem.

We begin by bounding $|\exp\{h(e^{it} - 1)\} - H_R(e^{it} - 1)|$ when $|t| \leq t_0$. For an arbitrary such $t$,

$$|\exp\{h(e^{it} - 1)\} - H_R(e^{it} - 1)| \leq \Delta_1 + \Delta_2, \quad (7.21)$$

where the $\Delta$s are the errors resulting from the approximations in (7.6).

Starting with $\Delta_1$, the inequality

$$|e^{z_1} - e^{z_2}| \leq \frac{1}{2} (e^{z_1} + e^{z_2}) |z_1 - z_2|, \quad z_1, z_2 \in \mathbb{C},$$

83
yields
\[ \Delta_1 = |\exp\{h(w)\} - \exp\{h_R(w)\}| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left| e^{h(w)} + e^{h_R(w)} \right| |h(w) - h_R(w)|. \] (7.22)

From the definitions of \( h(w) \) in (7.5) and that of \( h_R(w) \) in (7.7),
\[ |h_R(w)| \lor |h(w)| \leq |w| + \frac{|w|^2}{2} + 2 \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} (a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2}) |w|^r. \]

If \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \), then by (7.20) in Proposition 7.0.3, \( (a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2}) \leq 2^r \frac{n^r}{m^{r-1}}, r = 2, 3, \ldots, \) which implies
\[ |h_R(w)| \lor |h(w)| \leq |w| + \frac{|w|^2}{2} + 16 \frac{n^3}{m^2} \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} \left( \frac{2n}{m} |w| \right)^{r-3} \leq \frac{9}{8} |w| + \frac{32}{3} \frac{n^3}{m^2} |w|^3. \] (7.23)

At the last inequality we used \( |w| = |e^{it} - 1| \leq |t| \leq t_0 \leq \frac{1}{4} \) guaranteed by (7.14). If however \( m \geq \frac{n}{2} \), then \( \frac{n-m}{m+1} < 1 \), thus each term in the defining sum of \( a_{n,r} \) decreases as \( r \) increases, which means that \( a_{n,2} \geq a_{n,3} \geq \ldots \). Therefore by (7.20), for any \( r = 2, 3, \ldots, \) \( (a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2}) \leq a_{n,2} \leq 4 \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} \), and hence
\[ |h_R(w)| \lor |h(w)| \leq |w| + \frac{|w|^2}{2} + 8 \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|^3 \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} |w|^{r-3} \leq \frac{9}{8} |w| + \frac{32}{3} \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|^3. \] (7.24)

At the last inequality we used \( |w| = |e^{it} - 1| \leq |t| \leq t_0 \leq \frac{1}{4} \), true because of (7.16). Note that by (7.23) and (7.24), (7.14) and (7.16) also imply
\[ |h_R(w)| \lor |h(w)| \leq C \] (7.25)
in both cases (that is for all \( m \)).

If we write (7.25) back into (7.22), we obtain
\[ \Delta_1 \leq C |h(w) - h_R(w)| = C \left| \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} \left( a_{n,r} + (-1)^{r+1} a_{n,2} \right) \frac{w^r}{r} \right| \leq C \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} 2^{r} \left( a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2} \right) \frac{|w|^r}{r}. \]

We proceed by bounding the sum in the last expression. Once again we distinguish two cases, according to the values of \( m \). If \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \), then we use \( (a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2}) \leq 2^r \frac{n^r}{m^{r-1}}, r = 2, 3, \ldots, \) thus
\[ |h(w) - h_R(w)| \leq \frac{2^{R+2}}{R+1} \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R} |w|^{R+1} \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} \left( \frac{2n}{m} |w| \right)^{r-R-1}. \]

While if \( m \geq \frac{n}{2} \), then for any \( r = 2, 3, \ldots, (a_{n,r} \lor a_{n,2}) \leq a_{n,2} \leq 4 \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} \) as noticed before, thus
\[ |h(w) - h_R(w)| \leq \frac{8}{R+1} \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|^{R+1} \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} |w|^{r-R-1}. \]

The last two sums can be bounded with the help of \( |w| \leq t_0 \) and (7.14) or (7.16) as seen before, therefore we conclude
\[ \Delta_1 \leq \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
C_R \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R} |w|^{R+1}, & m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|^{R+1}, & m \geq \frac{n}{2}.
\end{array} \right. \] (7.26)
We now deal with $\Delta_2$. Recalling the definitions in (7.7) and (7.8), by the series expansion of the exponential function, we have

$$
\Delta_2 = |\exp\{h_R(w)\} - H_R(w)| = \left| \sum_{l=R+1}^{\infty} \frac{h_l^R(w)}{l!} \right| 
\leq \frac{|h_R(w)|^{R+1}}{(R + 1)!} \sum_{l=R+1}^{\infty} \frac{|h_R(w)|^{-l-1}}{(l - R - 1)!} = \frac{|h_R(w)|^{R+1}}{(R + 1)!} \exp\{|h_R(w)|\}.
$$

(7.27)

If $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, we use (7.25) and (7.24), and then the inequality $(a + b)^k \leq 2^k(a^k + b^k)$, $a, b \in \mathbb{R}^+$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$, which yield

$$
\Delta_2 \leq \frac{e^C}{(R + 1)!} \left[ \frac{9}{8} |w| + \frac{32}{3} \frac{n^3}{m^2} |w|^3 \right]^{R+1} \leq C_R |w|^{R+1} + C_R \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R} |w|^{R+1} \left[ \frac{n^{2(R+1)}}{m^{R+2}} |w|^{2(R+1)} \right],
$$

where

$$
\frac{n^{2(R+1)}}{m^{R+2}} |w|^{2(R+1)} \leq \frac{n^{2(R+1)}}{m^{R+2}} |t_0|^{2(R+1)} \leq C_R \frac{n^{2(R+1)}}{m^{R+2}} \left( \frac{\sqrt{m \log(\sqrt{m})}}{n} \right)^{2(R+1)} = C_R \left( \frac{\log(\sqrt{m})}{m} \right)^{R+1}
$$

by (7.17), and we see that there exists a constant depending on $R$, which bounds the last expression from above for all values of $m$.

If $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, we use (7.25) and (7.24) to continue the approximation of $\Delta_2$ in (7.27). Also applying the inequality $(a + b)^k \leq 2^k(a^k + b^k)$, $a, b \in \mathbb{R}^+$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$, we obtain

$$
\Delta_2 \leq \frac{e^C}{(R + 1)!} \left[ \frac{9}{8} |w| + \frac{32}{3} \frac{(n - m)^3}{n^2} |w|^3 \right]^{R+1} \leq C_R |w|^{R+1} + C_R \frac{(n - m)^3}{n^2} |w|^{R+1} \left[ \frac{(n - m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |w|^{2(R+1)} \right],
$$

where

$$
\frac{(n - m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |w|^{2(R+1)} \leq \frac{(n - m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |t_0|^{2(R+1)} \leq C_R \frac{(n - m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} \left( \frac{\sqrt{n \log(\sqrt{n})}}{n - m} \right)^{2(R+1)} \leq C_R \frac{(n - m)^{R-2}}{n^{R-1}} \left( \log(\sqrt{n}) \right)^{(R+1)} \leq C_R \left( \frac{\log(\sqrt{n})}{n} \right)^{(R+1)}
$$

by (7.18), and again we see that there exists a constant depending on $R$, which bounds the last expression from above for all of $n$. We also note that in the latest bound for $\Delta_2$, the second term is the bigger one due to our assumption $a_{n2} > 1$ and (1.19).

These considerations lead to

$$
\Delta_2 \leq \begin{cases}
    C_R \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R} |w|^{R+1}, & m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
    C_R \frac{(n - m)^3}{n^2} |w|^{R+1}, & m \geq \frac{n}{2},
\end{cases}
$$

85
which, up to a constant factor, is exactly the same upper bound we obtained for \( \Delta_1 \) in (7.26). Hence by (7.21) and \(|w| \leq |t|\),

\[
|\exp\{h(e^{it} - 1)\} - H_R(e^{it} - 1)\| \leq \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
C_R \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R} |t|^{R+1}, & m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \frac{n}{m} |t|^{R+1}, & m \geq \frac{n}{2};
\end{array} \right.
|t| \leq t_0
\]  

(7.28)

Next, from (7.4), by the application of the inequality \( 1 - \cos t \geq \frac{2t^2}{\pi^2} \), \( 0 \leq t \leq \pi \), we see that

\[
|\chi(t)| = \exp \left\{ -\sigma_n^2 (1 - \cos t) \right\} \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{2\sigma_n^2}{\pi^2} t^2 \right\}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq \pi.
\]  

(7.29)

The next step in our proof is to bound \(|\psi(t)|\). We recall the decomposition \( \psi(t) = \chi(t) H_R(e^{it} - 1) \) in (7.9), and start by examining \(|H_R(w)|\) (where \( w = e^{it} - 1 \)) defined in (7.8) and (7.7). If we look at (7.7), we see that with the application of the triangle inequality and \(|w| \leq |t|\), \(|h_R(w)|\) can be bounded from above by a polynomial of \(|t|\) of degree \( R \). The coefficients in this polynomial are less than 1 for \(|t|^n\) and \(|t|\), and their order is given by (7.20) for \(|t|^r, r = 3, \ldots, R\). If \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \), these orders are \( n^r/m^{r-1} \), \( r = 3, \ldots, R \), respectively, and hence

\[
|h_R(w)| \leq C + C_R \left( \frac{n^3}{m^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{n^3}{m^{R-1}} |t|^R I_{(\frac{m}{n}, \pi)}(t) \right),
\]

where for any \( A \subset \mathbb{R} \), \( I_A(t) \) is 1 if \(|t| \in A\) and 0 otherwise. If \( m \geq \frac{n}{2} \) the coefficient orders in the polynomial are \( (n-m)^3/n^2 \) for all \( r = 3, \ldots, R \), so

\[
|h_R(w)| \leq C + C_R \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |t|^R I_{(\frac{m}{n}, \pi)}(t) \right).
\]

By (7.8), these bounds imply

\[
|H_R(w)| \leq C_R + C_R \left( \frac{n^3}{m^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{n^3}{m^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{n^3}{m^{R-1}} |t|^R I_{(\frac{m}{n}, \pi)}(t) \right),
\]

if \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \), and

\[
|H_R(w)| \leq C_R + C_R \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |t|^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |t|^R I_{(\frac{m}{n}, \pi)}(t) \right),
\]

if \( m \geq \frac{n}{2} \).

We introduce a new variable \( x_{nt} := \sigma_n^2 t^2 \). With this, for \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \), by \( \frac{1}{20} n^2 t^2 \leq \sigma_n^2 t^2 \) from (7.11), we get

\[
|H_R(w)| \leq C_R + C_R \left( x_{nt}^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + x_{nt}^3 I_{[0, \frac{m}{n}]^3}(t) + x_{nt}^2 I_{(\frac{m}{n}, \pi)}(t) \right)
\]

=: \( p(x_{nt}) \), \quad if \( m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \)

(7.30)
and for \( m \geq \frac{n}{2} \), with the help of \( \frac{(n-m)^2}{n} t^2 \leq \sigma_n^2 t^2 \) from (7.11), we obtain

\[
|H_R(w)| \leq C_R + C_R \left( x_{nt}^2 I_{[0, \frac{n^{2/3}}{m+1}]} + x_{nt}^2 I_{[\frac{n^{2/3}}{m+1}, 1]}(t) + x_{nt}^2 I_{[\frac{n^{2/3}}{m+1}, \infty]}(t) \right) =: p(x_{nt}), \quad \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}
\]

Thus in either case, by (7.29), we have

\[
|\psi(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{\pi^2} x_{nt} \right\} \left( \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{\pi^2} x_{nt} \right\} p(x_{nt}) \right).
\]

The second term in the product above is clearly bounded from above by a constant depending on \( R \) for all \( x_{nt} \), and thus for all \( 0 \leq |t| \leq \pi \) and all values of \( \sigma_n \). The first term \( \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{\pi^2} \sigma_n^2 t^2 \right\} \) is a decreasing function of \( t \). Putting these together, and then using the definition of \( t_0 \) from (7.13) yields

\[
|\psi(t)| \leq C_R \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{\pi^2} \sigma_n^2 t_0^2 \right\} = C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, \quad t_0 \leq |t| \leq \pi. \quad (7.32)
\]

We proceed by bounding \( |\phi(t)| \). It is easy to calculate

\[
|\phi(t)| = \left| \exp \left\{ -\sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{k} (e^{it} - 1) \right) \right\} \right| = \prod_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{1}{\sqrt{1 + 2 \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} (1 - \cos t)}}.
\]

We note here that \( |\phi(t)| \) is obviously a decreasing function on the whole interval \([0, \pi]\), hence \( |\phi(t)| \leq |\phi(t_0)| \) for all \( t_0 \leq |t| \leq \pi \).

Now for any \( k = \{m+1, \ldots, n-1\} \), by the right hand side of the inequality

\[
\frac{t^2}{2} - \frac{t^4}{4!} \leq 1 - \cos t \leq \frac{t^2}{2} - \frac{t^4}{30}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq 1, \quad (7.33)
\]

and (7.14) or (7.16), we get

\[
x_{k,t_0} := 2 \frac{n(n-k)}{k^2} (1 - \cos t_0) \leq \frac{n(n-m-1)}{(m+1)^2} t_0^2 < 1.
\]

Therefore we can apply the inequality

\[
\frac{1}{1+x} \leq \exp \left\{ -x + \frac{x^2}{2} \right\}, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1,
\]

with \( x = x_{k,t_0} \) to obtain

\[
|\phi(t_0)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\sigma_n^2 (1 - \cos t_0) + b_n (1 - \cos t_0)^2 \right\},
\]

87
where $b_n = n^2 \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2}$. Next, applying (7.33) gives

$$|\phi(t)| \leq \exp \left\{ -\sigma_n^2 \left( \frac{t_0^2}{2} - \frac{t_0^4}{24} \right) + b_n \left( \frac{t_0^2}{2} - \frac{t_0^4}{30} \right)^2 \right\} \leq \exp \left\{ -\sigma_n^2 t_0^2 \left( \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{24} - \frac{b_n t_0^2}{4\sigma_n^2} \right) \right\}. \quad (7.34)$$

Now we shall prove $b_n t_0^2 \leq \sigma_n^2$. Since the terms in $b_n = n^2 \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \frac{(n-k)^2}{k^2}$ decrease as $k$ increases, with our usual technique we obtain

$$b_n \leq n^2 \int_{m}^{n} \frac{(n-x)^2}{x^4} \, dx = n^4 \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x^4} \, dx - 2n^3 \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x^3} \, dx + n^2 \int_{m}^{n} \frac{1}{x^2} \, dx = \frac{1}{3} n^4 \left( \frac{1}{m^3} - \frac{1}{n^3} \right) - n^3 \left( \frac{1}{m^2} - \frac{1}{n^2} \right) + n^2 \left( \frac{1}{m} - \frac{1}{n} \right) = \frac{1}{3} n \left( \frac{n-m}{m} \right)^3. \quad \text{(by (7.14), (7.16) and the bound above for $b_n$,)}$$

By (7.14), (7.16) and the bound above for $b_n$,

$$b_n t_0^2 \leq \frac{1}{48} n \left( \frac{n-m}{m} \right)^3 \left( \frac{m}{n} \right)^2 = \frac{1}{48} \left( \frac{n-m}{mn} \right)^3,$$

and the latter expression is at most $\sigma_n^2$ by (7.11) and $n-m \leq n$ if $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, and (7.12) and $(n-m)/m \leq 1$ if $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$. Therefore we have $b_n t_0^2 \leq \sigma_n^2$, and substituting this into (7.34) yields

$$|\phi(t)| \leq C \exp \left\{ -\frac{1}{\pi^2} \sigma_n^2 t_0^2 \right\} = C \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, \quad t_0 \leq |t| \leq \pi. \quad (7.35)$$

Now with the help of (7.35) and (7.32), it is easy to bound the difference $|\phi(t) - \psi(t)|$ at the points $t_0 < |t| \leq \pi$, which is necessary for the application of the Theorem 2.2.1:

$$|\phi(t) - \psi(t)| \leq |\phi(t)| + |\psi(t)| \leq C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, \quad t_0 \leq |t| \leq \pi.$$ 

If $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, then

$$\left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R \leq \left( \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^R = (\sqrt{n})^{R-2} \left( \frac{\sqrt{2}}{n} \right)^{R-1} \leq C_R \frac{(\sqrt{n})^{R-2}}{(n-m)^{R-1}}.$$ 

Therefore we have

$$|\phi(t) - \psi(t)| \leq \begin{cases} C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, & m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\ C_R \left( \frac{\sqrt{n}}{n-m} \right)^{R-2}, & m \geq \frac{n}{2}, \end{cases} \quad t_0 \leq |t| \leq \pi. \quad (7.36)$$

Now we apply Theorem 2.2.1. Condition (2.4) is given by (7.28) and (7.29), thus $S = 1$, $\gamma_0 = 0$, $\gamma_1 = C_R \frac{n^{R+1}}{m^R}$ if $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$ and $\gamma_1 = C_R \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2}$ if $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, $\theta_1 = R + 1$, $88$. 

\( \gamma = 1 \) and \( \rho = \frac{2}{\pi} \sigma_n^2 \). Condition (2.5) is given by (7.36), so
\[
\eta = C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R \text{ if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1 \text{ and } \\
\eta = C_R \left( \frac{\sqrt{n}}{m} \right)^{R-2} \text{ if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}.
\]
We also use Proposition 7.0.1 to bound \( \sigma_n \). It follows that
\[
\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu_R\{k\}| \leq \begin{cases} 
C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R , & m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \left( \frac{\sqrt{n}}{m} \right)^{R-2} , & m \geq \frac{n}{2}, 
\end{cases}
\]
which is exactly what we wanted to prove. \( \Box \)

We would like to prove an analogous result of Theorem 7.0.2 in the case when \( a_{n,2} < 1 \), hence from now on we assume that this inequality holds true. In this case \( \lfloor a_{n,2} \rfloor = 0 \), so the characteristic function in (7.1) has the form
\[
\phi(t) = \exp \left\{ - \sum_{k=m+1}^{n} \log \left( 1 - \frac{n-k}{k} (e^{it} - 1) \right) \right\}.
\]
Now we also assume \( (n-m)/n \leq 1/(4\pi) \), which implies
\[
\frac{n-k}{k} |w| = \frac{n-k}{k} |e^{it} - 1| \leq \frac{n-m-1}{m+1} |e^{it} - 1| \leq \frac{n-m-1}{m+1} |t| \leq 1,
\]
for all \( 0 \leq t \leq \pi \). This allows us to expand the logarithmic expression in \( \phi(t) \), therefore with \( w = e^{it} - 1 \) and the notation introduced in (7.2),
\[
\phi(t) = \exp \left\{ \sum_{r=1}^{\infty} a_{n,r} \frac{w^r}{r} \right\}, \quad |t| \leq \pi.
\]
We note that \( a_{n,1} = \sigma_n^2 - a_{n,2} \), hence the line above can be rewritten as
\[
\phi(t) = \chi(t) \exp \{ h(w) \}, \quad |t| \leq \pi,
\]
where \( \chi(t) \) is the characteristic function of the Poisson distribution with parameter \( \sigma_n^2 \) given in (7.4), and
\[
h(w) = -a_{n,2}w + a_{n,2} \frac{w^2}{2} + \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} a_{n,r} \frac{w^r}{r}.
\]
Now we fix an integer \( R \geq 3 \), and following the argument in (7.6), we modify the function \( \exp\{ h(w) \} \):
\[
\exp\{ h(w) \} \approx \exp\{ h_R(w) \} \approx H_R(w),
\]
where
\[
h_R(w) = -a_{n,2}w + a_{n,2} \frac{w^2}{2} + \sum_{r=3}^{R} a_{n,r} \frac{w^r}{r},
\]
and
\[
H_R(w) = \sum_{l=0}^{3R-2} \frac{h_R^l(w)}{l!}.
\]
We approximate the distribution \( \mu = \mathcal{D}(\tilde{W}_{n,m} + \epsilon) \) with \( \nu_R \), which we define to be the finite signed measure on the nonnegative integers whose characteristic function is
\[
\psi(t) = \chi(t)H_R(e^t - 1), \quad t \in \mathbb{R},
\]
repeating (7.9). But now \( H_R(e^t - 1) \) is a polynomial of \( e^t - 1 \) of degree \( 3R^2 - R \), and the corresponding Poisson–Charlier signed measure \( \nu_R = \nu_R(\sigma_n^2, \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(3R^2-R)}) \) is defined by
\[
\nu_R\{j\} = \text{Po}(\sigma_n^2)\{j\} \left(1 + \sum_{r=1}^{3R^2-R} (-1)^{r+1}\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}C_r(j, \sigma_n^2)\right), \quad j \in \mathbb{N},
\]
where \( \tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)} \) is the coefficient of \( (e^t - 1)^r \) in \( H_R(e^t - 1) \), and \( C_r(j, \sigma_n^2) \) is the \( r \)-th Charlier polynomial defined in (1.5).

**Theorem 7.0.2** We assume \( a_{n,2} < 1 \). For an arbitrary integer \( R \geq 3 \) there exist a threshold number \( n_R \) depending on \( R \) such that if \( n \geq n_R \), then
\[
\sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}}|\mu\{k\} - \nu_R\{k\}| \leq C_R \frac{1}{(\sqrt{n})^R}.
\]

**Proof.** By (7.19), condition \( a_{n,2} < 1 \) implies \( \frac{n_m}{n} < \frac{1}{3\pi} \) for all \( n \) greater than some threshold number \( n_R \) depending on \( R \). We fix integers \( R \geq 3 \) and \( n \geq n_R \).

As it was the case for Theorem 7.0.1, the key of the proof is Theorem 2.2.1. We apply it with the measures \( \mu \) and \( \nu_R \) defined above and \( t_0 = \pi \). Recalling the decompositions of the characteristic functions corresponding to \( \mu \) and \( \nu_R \) in (7.38) and (7.43), we now give an upper bound for the difference \( |\exp\{h(e^t - 1)\} - H_R(e^t - 1)|, \) \( |t| \leq \pi \). For an arbitrary such \( t \),
\[
|\exp\{h(e^t - 1)\} - H_R(e^t - 1)| \leq \Delta_1 + \Delta_2,
\]
where the \( \Delta \)s are the errors resulting from the approximations in (7.40).

Regarding \( \Delta_1 \), we apply the inequality
\[
|e^{z_1} - e^{z_2}| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left(|e^{z_1}| + |e^{z_2}|\right)|z_1 - z_2|, \quad z_1, z_2 \in \mathbb{C},
\]
and obtain
\[
\Delta_1 = |\exp\{h(w)\} - \exp\{h_R(w)\}| \leq \frac{1}{2} \left(e^{|h(w)|} + e^{|h_R(w)|}\right)|h(w) - h_R(w)|.
\]
From the new definitions of \( h(w) \) in (7.39) and that of \( h_R(w) \) in (7.41),
\[
|h_R(w)| \vee |h(w)| \leq a_{n,2}|w| + a_{n,2} \frac{|w|^2}{2} + \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} a_{n,r} \frac{|w|^r}{r}
\]
By (7.20),

\[
|h_R(w)| \vee |h(w)| \leq \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w| + \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|^2 + 8 \frac{(n-m)^4}{n^3} |w|^3 \sum_{r=3}^{\infty} \left( 2 \frac{n-m}{n} |w|^r \right)^{r-3}
\]

\[
\leq \left( 1 + \frac{\pi}{2} \right) \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w| + \frac{32}{3} \frac{(n-m)^4}{n^3} |w|^3
\]

\[
\leq \left( 1 + \frac{\pi}{2} + \frac{32\pi^2}{3} \right) \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w|.
\]

(7.47)

At the second inequality we used \((n-m)/n < 1/(4\pi)\) and \(|w| = |e^t - 1| \leq |t| \leq \pi\). Note that the latter inequality and \(a_{n,2} < 1\) together with (7.19) imply

\[
\frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w| = \left( \frac{n-m}{n^{2/3}} \right) |w| \leq C,
\]

thus we also have

\[
|h_R(w)| \vee |h(w)| \leq C.
\]

(7.48)

If we write (7.48) back into (7.46), we obtain

\[
\Delta_1 \leq C |h(w) - h_R(w)| = C \left| \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} a_{n,r} \frac{w^r}{r} \right| \leq C \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} a_{n,r} |\frac{w^r}{r}|
\]

\[
\leq \frac{2^{R+1}}{R+1} \frac{(n-m)^{R+2}}{n^{R+1}} |w|^{R+1} \sum_{r=R+1}^{\infty} \left( 2 \frac{n-m}{n} |w| \right)^{r-R-1}.
\]

Again, we see from \(|w| \leq \pi\) and \((n-m)/n < 1/(4\pi)\) that the last sum above is finite for all \(|t| \leq \pi\). We conclude

\[
\Delta_1 \leq C_R \frac{(n-m)^{R+2}}{n^{R+1}} |w|^{R+1}.
\]

(7.49)

We now deal with \(\Delta_2\). Recalling the definitions in (7.41) and (7.42), by the series expansion of the exponential function, we have

\[
\Delta_2 = |\exp|h_R(w)| - H_3R-2(w)| = \left| \sum_{l=3R-1}^{\infty} \frac{h_R(w)^l}{l!} \right|
\]

\[
\leq \frac{|h_R(w)|^{3R-1}}{(3R-1)!} \sum_{l=3R-1}^{\infty} \frac{|h_R(w)|^{l-3R+1}}{(l-3R+1)!} = \frac{|h_R(w)|^{3R-1}}{(3R-1)!} \exp\{|h_R(w)|\}.
\]

Now \(\exp\{|h_R(w)|\} \leq C\) by (7.48), and

\[
|h_R(w)|^{3R-1} \leq C_R \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{n^2} |w| \right)^{3R-1} = C_R \frac{(n-m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |w|^{3R-1} \left( \frac{n-m}{n^{2/3}} \right)^{3(2R-1)},
\]

where the last fraction is less than some constant depending on \(R\) by \(a_{n,2} < 1\) and (7.19). Therefore we conclude

\[
\Delta_2 \leq C_R \frac{(n-m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |w|^{3R-1}.
\]
We substitute the inequality above and (7.49) into (7.45), thus with \(|w| \leq |t|\), we obtain

\[ |\exp\{h(e^{it} - 1)\} - H_R(e^{it} - 1)| \leq C_R \frac{(n-m)^{R+2}}{n^{R+1}} |t|^{R+1} + C_R \frac{(n-m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}} |t|^{3R-1}. \]

Now we apply Theorem 2.2.1. Condition (2.4) with \(t_0 = \pi\) is given by the last inequality and (7.29), which is also true in this case, thus \(S = 2\), \(\gamma_0 = 0\), \(\gamma_1 = CR \frac{(n-m)^{R+2}}{n^{R+1}}\), \(\gamma_2 = CR \frac{(n-m)^{3R}}{n^{2R}}\), \(\theta_1 = R + 1\), \(\theta_2 = 3R - 1\), \(\gamma = 1\) and \(\rho = \frac{2}{\pi^2} \sigma_n^2\). We also use Proposition 7.0.1 to bound \(\sigma_n\). It follows that

\[ \sup_{k \in \mathbb{Z}} |\mu\{k\} - \nu_R\{k\}| \leq C_R \frac{1}{(\sqrt{n})^R}, \]

and the proof of Theorem 7.0.2 is complete. \(\blacksquare\)

As outlined at the beginning of the chapter, our goal is to estimate the total variation distance of \(\mu\) and \(\nu_R\). Formula (2.8) in Theorem 2.2.1 also provides us a way to derive total variation error bounds form the local error bounds given by Theorems 7.0.1 and 7.0.2.

But first, we would like to determine the difference in total variation between the approximating measures for successive values of \(R\). By Lemma 6. in [2], we know that the total variation norm of \(C_r(\cdot, \sigma_n^2) Po(\sigma_n^2)\) is less than \(((2r) / (e\sigma_n^2))^{r/2}\). With the help of this and Propositions 7.0.3 and 7.0.1, one can derive that the term that has the greatest total variation norm of \(\nu\) is a good approximation of \(\nu\), which is also true in this case, thus

\[ ||\nu_{R+1} - \nu_R||_{TV} \leq C_R \alpha^{R+1}_{R,m} \left( \frac{1}{\sigma_n} \right)^{R+1}. \]

From Proposition 7.0.3, one can also deduce that the order of \(\alpha_{R,m}^{R+1}\) is \(nm^{R+1}/m^R\), \((n-m)^{R+2}/n^{R+1}\) respectively, in the three cases indicated in the display below. Hence, by Proposition 7.0.1, we have

\[ ||\nu_{R+1} - \nu_R||_{TV} \leq \begin{cases} 
 C_R \frac{1}{(\sqrt{n})^{R-1}}, & \text{in the case of Theorem 7.0.1 when } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
 C_R \frac{(\sqrt{n})^{R-3}}{(n-m)^{R-2}}, & \text{in the case of Theorem 7.0.1 when } m \geq \frac{n}{2}; \\
 C_R \frac{n-m}{(\sqrt{n})^{R+1}}, & \text{in the case of Theorem 7.0.2}. 
\end{cases} \tag{7.50} \]

**Corollary 7.0.1** For all \(n\) and \(m\) for which Theorem 7.0.1 is valid we have

\[ d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C_R \sigma_n \log \sigma_n \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^R, \quad \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1, \]

and

\[ d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C_R \frac{(\sqrt{n})^{R-3}}{(n-m)^{R-2}}, \quad \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}, \]

with \(\nu_R\) defined in (7.10). For all \(n\) and \(m\) for which Theorem 7.0.2 is valid we have

\[ d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C_R \frac{n-m}{(\sqrt{n})^{R+1}}, \]

with \(\nu_R\) defined in (7.44).
Proof. First we assume that $n$ and $m$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 7.0.1. It follows from (2.9) and the end of the proof of Theorem 7.0.1 that

$$\varepsilon_{ab} \leq \begin{cases} C_R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^{R-1} + C_R (b - a + 2) \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^{R}, & \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\ C_R \left( \frac{1}{(n-m)^{R-1}} \right)^{n-m} + C_R (b - a + 2) \left( \frac{1}{(n-m)^{R-1}} \right), & \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}. \end{cases} (7.51)$$

In order to obtain a total variation bound by (2.8), we need to be able to control the tails of the approximating measure $\nu_R$. As in [6] p. 9, it can be deduced from the Chernoff inequalities for Po($\sigma_n^2$) that

$$|\nu_R|\{[0, a)\} \leq R^2 \max_{1 \leq r \leq R^2} \{\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}\} \exp \left\{ -\frac{(\sigma_n^2 - a)^2}{3\sigma_n^2} \right\}, \quad 0 \leq a \leq \sigma_n^2 (7.52)$$

and

$$|\nu_R|\{(b, \infty)\} \leq R^2 \max_{1 \leq r \leq R^2} \{\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}\} \exp \left\{ -\frac{(b - R^2 - \sigma_n^2)^2}{3\sigma_n^2} \right\}, \quad \sigma_n^2 + R^2 \leq b \leq 2\sigma_n^2. (7.53)$$

If $m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1$, then by (7.20),

$$\max_{1 \leq r \leq R^2} \{\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}\} \leq C_R \left( \frac{nR}{mR - 1} \right)^R$$

and we choose

$$a = \sigma_n^2 - \sqrt{3\sigma_n^2 \log \left( \left( \frac{nR}{mR - 1} \right)^R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^{R-1} \right)}$$

and

$$b = \sigma_n^2 + R^2 + \sqrt{3\sigma_n^2 \log \left( \left( \frac{nR}{mR - 1} \right)^R \left( \frac{1}{\sqrt{m}} \right)^{R-1} \right)}.$$

By (7.11), the argument of the logarithmic expressions in $a$ and $b$ are less than $\sigma_n^2 R^2$, hence for all large enough $\sigma_n$, $0 \leq a \leq \sigma_n^2$ and $\sigma_n^2 + R^2 \leq b \leq 2\sigma_n^2$. In the case when $m \geq \frac{n}{2}$, we have

$$\max_{1 \leq r \leq R^2} \{\tilde{a}_{n,m}^{(r)}\} \leq C_R \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{m^2} \right)^R$$

by (7.20), and we put

$$a = \sigma_n^2 - \sqrt{3\sigma_n^2 \log \left( \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{m^2} \right)^R \left( \frac{(n-m)^{R-2}}{(\sqrt{m})^{R-3}} \right) \right)}$$

and

$$b = \sigma_n^2 + R^2 + \sqrt{3\sigma_n^2 \log \left( \left( \frac{(n-m)^3}{m^2} \right)^R \left( \frac{(n-m)^{R-2}}{(\sqrt{m})^{R-3}} \right) \right)}.$$
Again, we see form (7.11) that the argument of the logarithmic expressions in \(a\) and \(b\) are less than \(\sigma_n^{2R-1}\), hence for all large enough \(\sigma_n\), \(0 \leq a \leq \sigma_n^2\) and \(\sigma_n^2 + R^2 \leq b \leq 2\sigma_n^2\). Therefore, in both cases one can apply the inequalities (7.52) and (7.53), which yield

\[
|\nu_R|\{(0, a) \cup (b, \infty)\} \leq \begin{cases} 
C_R \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^{R-1}, & \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^{R-3}, & \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}.
\end{cases}
\]

Combining this with (7.37) and (7.51) in (2.8), with the choices of \(a\) and \(b\) given above, one can deduce

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq \begin{cases} 
C_R \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^{R-1} + C_R \sigma_n \log \sigma_n \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^R, & \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \left(\frac{1}{(n-m)^{R-3}}\right) + C_R \sigma_n \log \sigma_n \left(\frac{1}{(n-m)^{R-2}}\right), & \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}.
\end{cases}
\]

Together with Proposition 7.0.1 this gives

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq \begin{cases} 
C_R \sigma_n \log \sigma_n \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^R, & \text{if } m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1; \\
C_R \log \sigma_n \left(\frac{1}{(n-m)^{R-2}}\right), & \text{if } m \geq \frac{n}{2}.
\end{cases}
\]

(7.54)

We see that in the case when \(m \leq \frac{n}{2} - 1\), we already have the inequality we aimed for. In the latter case, when \(m \geq \frac{n}{2}\), one can omit the \(\log \sigma_n\) factor in the bound above with the help of the following argument. Note that

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq ||\nu_{R+1} - \nu_R||_{TV} + d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_{R+1}).
\]

The first term on the right hand side of the inequality above can be bounded by (7.50) and the second can be estimated by (7.54) with \(R\) replaced by \(R + 1\). Then, by Proposition 7.0.1, the second inequality of Corollary 7.0.1 follows.

Now we assume that \(n\) and \(m\) satisfy the conditions of Theorem 7.0.2. In this case we can apply Theorem 3.2. from [6] to obtain

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C_R \log \sigma_n \frac{n - m}{(\sqrt{n})^{R+1}}.
\]

We can apply the same argument as above to omit the \(\log \sigma_n\) from the bound above. Indeed, we obtain

\[
d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C_R \frac{n - m}{(\sqrt{n})^{R+1}} + C_R \log \sigma_n \frac{n - m}{(\sqrt{n})^{R+2}}.
\]

Since \(\log \sigma_n \leq \sigma_n \leq \sqrt{2(n - m)}/\sqrt{n}\) by Proposition 7.0.1, and \((n - m)/n \leq 1\), we finished the proof of the third inequality of Corollary 7.0.1. ■

Comparing the results of Corollary 7.0.1 with (7.50), we see that in the small \(m\) case, when \(m \leq n/2 - 1\), our results are not optimal in the sense that the error order of the approximation with \(\nu_R\) does not coincide with the order of the total variation norm \(||\nu_{R+1} - \nu_R||_{TV}\) of the \((R + 1)\)-th correction term. We see from the proof of Corollary 7.0.1, that the technique used in the other cases to omit the \(\log \sigma_n\) from the total variation bounds does not work for small \(m\), because for such \(m\), \(\sigma_n\) is of order \(n/\sqrt{m}\), which is not comparable
with the $1/(\sqrt{m})^{R+1}$ factor of the error order. It is an interesting open problem whether $d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_R) \leq C R/(\sqrt{m})^{R-1}$ can be achieved for $m \leq n/2 - 1$.

We finish the chapter by comparing its results with the ones obtained in Chapter 6 for compound Poisson approximation. First, we note that with some extra, but trivial considerations, the proofs of the chapter could be modified to hold true for $R = 2$ also. Now, if the hypothesis formulated in the previous paragraph is true, than the bounds we obtain for $d_{TV}(\mu, \nu_2)$ would exactly match the total variation bounds in (6.8) for the compound Poisson approximation of $\mu$. We guess that if one defines $\chi$ in (7.4) to be the characteristic function of the compound Poisson distribution given in Theorem 6.2.1, then the technique used in this chapter with this more sensitive choice of approximating measure would lead to an improvement in terms of the error bounds.
Summary

The coupon collector’s problem is one of the classical problems of probability theory. In this thesis, we are interested in the version of the problem, when a collector samples with replacement a set of $n \geq 2$ distinct coupons so that at each time any one of the $n$ coupons is drawn with the same probability $1/n$. For a fixed integer $m \in \{0,1,\ldots,n-1\}$, this is repeated until $n-m$ distinct coupons are collected for the first time. Let $W_{n,m}$ denote the number of necessary repetitions to achieve this. Thus the random variable $W_{n,m}$, called the coupon collector’s waiting time, can take on the values $n-m, n-m+1, n-m+2, \ldots$, and gives the number of draws necessary to have a collection, for the first time, with only $m$ coupons missing. In particular, $W_{n,0}$ is the waiting time to acquire, for the first time, a complete collection.

Different limit theorems have been proved for the asymptotic distribution of $W_{n,m}$, depending on how $m = m(n)$ behaves as $n \to \infty$. (All asymptotic relations throughout are meant as $n \to \infty$.) The first result was proved by Erdős and Rényi for complete collections when $m = 0$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, obtaining a limiting shifted Gumbel extreme value distribution. This result was extended by Baum and Billingsley, who examined all relevant sequences of $m = m(n)$. They determined four different limiting distributions: the degenerate distribution at 0, the Poisson distribution, the normal distribution and a Gumbel-like distribution.

One of the aims of this thesis is to refine the limit theorems of Baum and Billingsley. Our basic goal is to approximate the distribution of the coupon collector’s appropriately centered and normalized waiting time with well-known measures with high accuracy, and in many cases prove asymptotic expansions for the related probability distribution functions and mass functions. The approximating measures are chosen from five different measure families. Three of them – the Poisson distributions, the normal distributions and the Gumbel-like distributions – are probability measure families whose members occur as limiting laws in the limit theorems of Baum and Billingsley.

The fourth set of measures considered is a certain $\{\pi_{\mu,a} : \mu > 0, a > 0\}$ family of compound Poisson measures. For each $\mu > 0$ and $a > 0$, we define $\pi_{\mu,a}$ to be the probability distribution of $Z_1 + 2Z_2$, where $Z_1$ and $Z_2$ are independent random variables defined on a common probability space, $Z_1 \sim \text{Po}(\mu)$ and $Z_2 \sim \text{Po}(a/2)$.

The fifth set of approximating measures we consider is the family of Poisson–Charlier signed measures. For any positive real numbers $\lambda$, $\tilde{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}^{(S)}$ and $S \in \mathbb{N}$, the Poisson–Charlier signed measure $\nu = \nu(\lambda, \tilde{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \tilde{a}^{(S)})$ is a signed measure concentrated on the non-negative integers defined by $\nu\{j\} = \text{Po}(\lambda) \left( \sum_{r=1}^{S} (-1)^r \tilde{a}^{(r)} C_r(j, \lambda) \right)$, $j \in \mathbb{N}$, where $C_r(j, \lambda)$ is the $r$-th Charlier polynomial.
Our results are the following:

- **Chapter 3**
  
  In this chapter, we are interested in the asymptotic behavior of the distribution function of the appropriately standardized waiting time $F_{n,m}$, if $m$ is a fixed constant for all $n$ and $n \to \infty$. With $F_m$ denoting the limiting distribution function, for every $m$, we give a one-term asymptotic expansion $F_m + G_{n,m}$ that approximates $F_{n,m}$ with the uniform order of $1/n$ such that the explicit sequence of functions $G_{n,m}$ has the uniform order of $(\log n)/n$. We use characteristic functions in our proof.

  We also give an argument, that not only proves that the error order of this approximation is sharp, but also that no longer asymptotic expansion of $F_{n,m}$ can improve the error order of $1/n$.

- **Chapter 4**
  
  In this chapter, with a classical characteristic function method, we prove that the error order for normal approximation to the coupon collector’s standardized waiting time is at most $n/(m\sigma_n)$ in Kolmogorov distance, where $\sigma_n$ denotes the standard deviation of the waiting time. One can check that this bound is ideal in the sense that it tends to 0, iff $n$ and $m$ satisfy the conditions of the central limit theorem concerning the coupon collector’s problem.

- **Chapter 5**
  
  In the first section of Chapter 5, we consider Poisson approximation to the distribution of sums of asymptotically negligible integer valued random variables in general. We complement a classical Poisson convergence theorem of Gnedenko and Kolmogorov. Considering an arbitrary triangular array $\{Y_{n1}, Y_{n2}, \ldots, Y_{nrn}\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ of row-wise independent nonnegative integer valued random variables, for each $n$, we approximate the distribution of the $n$-th row sum with a Poisson distribution whose mean $\lambda_n$ is defined only in terms of the distributions of the random variables in the $n$-th row, but we do not assume the existence of moments. We give both lower and upper bounds, which have precisely the same form, up to a constant, provided that the means $\lambda_n$ are bounded away from infinity. We thus refine the obvious approximation of the $Y_{n}$-s that the Gnedenko-Kolmogorov limit theorem suggests.

  In the next section we examine how the coupon collector’s problem fits in the framework of the previous section. We show that the Poisson limit theorem concerning the coupon collector’s waiting time is a special case of the Gnedeno–Kolmogorov theorem. Applying the general results of the previous section to the waiting time, we obtain a Poisson approximation of error order $1/\sqrt{n}$.

  In the third section of the chapter we take advantage of the combinatorial structure of the coupon collector’s problem. This combinatorial approach yields us a stronger result than the one of the previous section: we derive the first asymptotic correction of the $P(W_{n,m} - (n - m) = k), k = 0, 1, \ldots$, probabilities to the corresponding Poisson point probabilities.
In the final section of Chapter 5, we approximate the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} = W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) with another Poisson law, namely with the one that has the same mean as \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \). One can easily calculate that in the range of parameters \( n \) and \( m \) for which the Poisson limit theorem holds true, the error order of this new approximation is \( 1/n \), which is clearly better than the error order \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) given in the preceding two sections for the same case. The proof here is based on Stein’s method, and heavily uses the fact that the means of the compared probability measures coincide.

- Chapter 6

In the first section of Chapter 6 we consider translated compound Poisson approximation of sums of independent integer valued random variables in general. Using Stein’s method, Barbour and others gave bounds for the errors of such approximations in total variation distance. Their upper bounds are expressed with the help of the first three moments of the summands \( X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n \) and the critical ingredient
\[
d_{TV}(D(W_n), D(W_n + 1)),
\]
where \( W_n = \sum_{j=1}^n X_j \).

The expression \( d_{TV}(D(W_n), D(W_n + 1)) \) is usually bounded by the Mineka coupling, which typically yields a bound of order \( 1/\sqrt{n} \). If the \( X_j \)'s are roughly similar in magnitude, this is comparable with the order \( O(1/\sqrt{\text{Var} W_n}) \) expected for the error in the central limit theorem. However, if the distributions of the \( X_j \) become progressively more spread out as \( j \) increases, then \( \text{Var} W_n \) may grow faster than \( n \), and then \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) is bigger than the ideal order \( O(1/\sqrt{\text{Var} W_n}) \). In fact, this is the situation in the case when we chose \( W_n \) to be the coupon collector’s waiting time. We introduce a new coupling which allows us to improve the Mineka bounds in such settings.

In the next section, we approximate the distribution of the appropriately centered coupon collector’s waiting time with a compound Poisson measure \( \pi_{\mu,a} \) defined above. We apply general results of translated compound Poisson approximation of sums of independent integer valued random variables and our new coupling. We prove that a translated compound Poisson approximation to the collector’s waiting time, with ideal error rate, can be obtained in all ranges of \( n \) and \( m \) in which a central or Poisson limit theorem holds true. Comparing this result with the ones we obtained for normal approximation, we see that the same or better order of approximation is obtained with this discrete approximation, and now with the error measured with respect to the much stronger total variation distance.

- Chapter 7

In the final chapter of the thesis we approximate the coupon collector’s shifted waiting time \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} = W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) with Poisson–Charlier signed measures in total variation distance. To do so, we apply a characteristic function technique. For an arbitrary \( R \geq 3 \), we choose a Poisson–Charlier signed measure \( \nu_R \) depending on \( R \). Approximating \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} \) with \( \nu_R \), we obtain error bounds of order \( \sigma_n \log \sigma_n (1/\sqrt{m})^R \), \( (\sqrt{n})^{R-3}/(n - m)^{R-2} \) and \( (n - m)/(\sqrt{n})^{R+1} \) depending on how the sequences \( m/n \) and \( \sigma_n^2 - \mu \) behave as \( n \) tends to infinity, where \( \mu \) is the mean and \( \sigma_n^2 \) is the variance of \( W_{n,m} \).
Összefoglalás

A kupongyűjtő probléma a valószínűségszámítás egyik klasszikus problémája. A dolgozatban a probléma következő változatával foglalkozunk: advan n ≥ 2 különböző kupon, melyekből egy gyűjtő véletlenszerű visszatevéses mintát vesz úgy, hogy minden egyes alkalommal az n kupon bármelyikét azonos, tehát 1/n valószínűséggel szerzi meg. Valamely rögzített m ∈ \{0, 1, \ldots, n-1\} esetén a mintavételt addig folytatja, amíg előszörre pontosan n−m különböző kupon nem gyűjtött. Jelölje W_{n,m} az ehhez szükséges ismétlések számát. Tehát a W_{n,m} véletlen változó, amelyet a kupongyűjtő várakozási idejének nevezünk, az n−m, n−m+1, n−m+2, \ldots értékeket veheti fel, és megadja, hogy a gyűjtőnek hányzor kell húznia ahhoz, hogy m darab kupon kivételével minden kupon a birtokában legyen. Speciálisan, W_{n,0} a teljes gyűjtemény megszerzéséhez szükséges várakozási idő.

Különböző határeloszlás tételeket bizonyítottak W_{n,m} aszimptotikus eloszlására attól függően, hogy az m = m(n) sorozat hogyan viselkedik, amint n → ∞. (A továbbiakban minden konvergencia és aszimptotikus reláció n → ∞ mellett értendő.) Az első eredmény Erdős és Rényi nevéhez fűződik, akik a teljes gyűjtemény esetére, amikor minden n ∈ N esetén m = 0, eltolt Gumbel-eloszlást kaptak határeloszlásként. Ezt az eredményt általánosította Baum és Billingsley, akik minden m = m(n) sorozat típusát vizsgáltak. Négy különböző határeloszlást határoztak meg: a 0-ra koncentrált eloszlást, a Poisson eloszlást, a normális eloszlást, és egy a Gumbel-eloszlásból származtatható eloszlást.


A negyedik approximáló mértékesadáls az összetett Poisson eloszlásoknak bizonyos \{π_{μ,a} : μ > 0, a > 0\} osztálya. Tetszőleges μ > 0 és a > 0 esetén π_{μ,a} a Z_1 + 2Z_2 véletlen változó eloszlását jelöli, ahol Z_1 és Z_2 valamely közös valószínűségi mezőn definiált független véletlen változók, Z_1 ~ Po(μ) és Z_2 ~ Po(a/2). Az ötödik közölt mértékesadal a Poisson–Charlier előjeles mértékek osztálya. Tetszőleges pozitív valós λ, \vec{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \vec{a}^{(S)} és S ∈ N esetén a ν = ν(λ, \vec{a}^{(1)}, \ldots, \vec{a}^{(S)}) Poisson–Charlier előjeles mérték az az előjeles mérték, amely a nemnegatív egészekre van koncentrálna, és ν\{j\} = Po(λ) \left( \sum_{r=1}^{S} (-1)^r \vec{a}^{(r)} C_r(j, λ) \right), j ∈ N, ahol C_r(j, λ) az r-edik Charlier polinom.

101
Eredményeink a következőek:

• 3. fejezet

A 3. fejezetben a megfelelően standardizált várakozási idő \( F_{n,m} \) eloszlásfüggvényének aszimptotikus viselkedését vizsgáljuk abban az esetben, amikor \( m \) minden \( n \)-re rögzített konstans és \( n \to \infty \). Jelölje \( F_m \) a határeloszlás függvényt. Minden \( m \) esetén olyan \( F_{m} + G_{n,m} \) egytagú aszimptotikus sorfejtést adunk, amely egyenletesen \( \frac{1}{n} \) rendben közelíti az \( F_{n,m} \) eloszlásfüggvényt, továbbá az explicít módon megadott \( G_{n,m} \) függvények sorozata egyenletesen \( \log n \) rendű. A bizonyításban karakterisztikus függvényeket használunk.

Azt is belátjuk, hogy a közelítés hibarendja éles, és hogy \( F_{n,m} \)-nek semmilyen hosszabb aszimptotikus sorfejtése esetén nem kaphatunk az \( \frac{1}{n} \) rendnél kisebb hibarendet.

• 4. fejezet

A dolgozat ezen fejezetében klasszikus, karakterisztikus függvényeket használó módszerrel belátjuk, hogy a kupon gyűjtő várakozási idejének normális eloszlással való közelítésének Kolmogorov távolságban mért hibája legfeljebb \( n/(m \sigma_n) \) rendű, ahol \( \sigma_n \) a várakozási idő szórását jelöli. Ellenőrizhető, hogy ez az approximáció jó abban az értelemben, hogy \( \sigma_n \) és \( n \) teljesítik a kupongyűjtő problémára vonatkozó centrális határeloszlás tétel feltételeit.

• 5. fejezet

Az 5. fejezet első részében általános független nemnegatív egészértékű véletlenszámok összegeinek eloszlását közelítjük Poisson eloszlással. A Gnedenko és Kolmogorov nevéhez fűződő klasszikus Poisson határeloszlás tételt finomítjuk. Tetszőleges, soronként független, nemnegatív egészértékű véletlenszámok összegei 
\[ \{Y_{n1}, Y_{n2}, \ldots, Y_{nr_n}\}, n \in \mathbb{N} \] szériasorozatot tekintve minden \( n \) esetén az \( n \)-edik sor összege eloszlását olyan Poisson eloszlással közelítjük, melynek \( \lambda_n \) várható értéke csak az \( n \)-sorban szereplő véletlenszámok összege eloszlásától függ, de nem követeljük meg momentumok létezését. A közelítés hibája al só és felső korlátot is adunk, melyek rendje konstans szorzótól eltekintve megegyezik, feltéve, hogy a \( \lambda_n \) paraméterek korlátosak. Ezáltal jobb közelítését adjuk az \( Y_n \) változóknak, mint amit a kézenfekvő, határeloszlással történő approximáció jelent.

A fejezet második alfejezetében megmutatjuk, hogy a várakozási időre vonatkozó Poisson határeloszlás tétel speciális esete a Gnedeno–Kolmogorov tételének. Megmutatjuk, hogy ha az előző alfejezet eredményeit alkalmazzuk a várakozási időre, \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) hibarendű Poisson közelítését kapjuk.

A harmadik alfejezetben a kupongyűjtő probléma kombinatorikai struktúrájára építünk. A kombinatorikai megfontolásokra támaszkodó módszer segítségével erősebb eredményt tudunk igazolni, mint az előző alfejezetben: a \( P(W_{n,m} - (n - m) = k), k = 0, 1, \ldots, \) valószínűségek megfelelő Poisson valószínűségekkel történő közelítésére pontosítjuk az első korrekciós tag meghatározása révén.

Az 5. fejezet utolsó alfejezetében a kupongyűjtő \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} = W_{n,m} - (n - m) \) eltolt várakozási idejét egy újabb Poisson eloszlású véletlen változóval közelítjük, méghozzá
olyannal, amelynek várható értéke megegyezik \( W_{n,m} \) várható értékével. Kiszámolható, hogy azonon \( n \) és \( m \) paraméter értékek esetén, melyekre érvényes a Poisson határeloszlás tétel, az approximáció hibájának rendje \( 1/n \), ami világos, hogy kisebb, mint az előző két alfejezetben ugyanezen esetre bizonyított \( 1/\sqrt{n} \)-es hibarend. A bizonyítás a Stein-módszeren alapozik, és kihasználja azt a tényt, hogy az összehasonlított eloszlások várható értékei egyenlők.

- 6. fejezet

A hatodik fejezet első alfejezetében független egészértékű véletlen változók összegeinek összetett Poisson eloszlású változókkal történő közelítését vizsgáljuk általánosságban. A Stein-módszer segítségével Barbour és mások felső korlátokat adtak az ilyen típusú approximációk teljes variációs távolságban mért hibáira. Ezek a korlátok az \( X_1, X_2, \ldots, X_n \) összeadandók első három momentumának és a \( d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W_n), \mathcal{D}(W_{n+1})) \) kifejezésnek függvényei, ahol \( W_n = \sum_{j=1}^{n} X_j \).

A \( d_{TV}(\mathcal{D}(W_n), \mathcal{D}(W_{n+1})) \) kifejezést általában a Mineka-csatolás segítségével lehet becsülni, amit tipikusan \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) rendű eredményt ad. Ha az \( X_j \) véletlen változók nagyjából azonos szórásúak, akkor ez az eredmény közel van a centrális határeloszlás tétel esetén elvárt \( O(1/\sqrt{\text{Var}W_n}) \) hibarendhez. Azonban ha az \( X_j \) véletlen változók eloszlásai egyre laposabbak, amint \( j \) nő, akkor \( \text{Var}W_n \) nőhet gyorsabban, mint \( n \), és ekkor \( 1/\sqrt{n} \) jóval nagyobb lesz, mint az elvárható \( 1/\sqrt{\text{Var}W_n} \)-es rend. Pontosan ez a helyzet, ha \( W_n \)-nek a kupongyűjtő várakozási idejét választjuk. Bevezetünk egy új csatolást, mely segítségével ilyen esetekben jobb eredményeket tudunk bizonyítani, mint a Mineka-csatolás segítségével.

A következő alfejezetben a kupongyűjtő megfelelően centralizált várakozási idejének eloszlását a korábban definiált \( \pi_{\mu,a} \) összetett Poisson eloszlással közelítjük. Független egészértékű véletlen változók összegeire vonatkozó általános összetett Poisson approximációs eredményeket és az új csatolásunkat alkalmazzuk. Belátjuk, hogy a \( W_{n,m} \) várakozási idő jól közelíthető összetett Poisson eloszlással abban az esetben, amikor az \( n \) és \( m \) paraméterek teljesítik a kupongyűjtő problémára vonatkozó centrális vagy Poisson határeloszlás tétel feltételeit. Ezeket és a normális approximációra kapott eredményeket összehasonlítva látjuk, hogy az itt bevezetett diszkrit approximáció ugyanolyan, vagy jobb közelítést jelenti a várakozási időnek, mint a normális approximáció. Ráadásul a közelítés hibáját itt a Kolmogorov távolságnál sokkal erősebb teljes variációs távolságban mérjük.

- 7. fejezet

Az utolsó fejezetben a kupongyűjtő \( \tilde{W}_{n,m} = W_{n,m} - (n-m) \) eltolt várakozási idejét Poisson–Charlier előjelű mértékekkel közelíthetők teljes variációs távolságban. Ehhez egy karakterisztikus függvényekat használó módszert alkalmazzuk. Tetszőleges \( R \geq 3 \) esetén definiálunk egy \( R \)-től függő \( \nu_R \) Poisson–Charlier előjelű mértéket. Az eltolt várakozási időt ezzel közelíthető \( \sigma_n \log \sigma_n (1/\sqrt{m})^R, (\sqrt{m})^{R-2}/(n-m)^{R-2} \), illetve \( (n-m)/(\sqrt{m})^{R-1} \) hibarendeket kapunk aszerint, hogy \( n/m \), illetve \( \sigma_n^2 - n/m \) sorozatok hogyan viselkednek, amint \( n \to \infty \), ahol \( \mu_n \) a várakozási idő várható értékét, \( \sigma_n^2 \) pedig a szórásnégyzetét jelöli.
Acknowledgement

I am heartily thankful to my supervisors Sándor Csörgő and Andrew Barbour. Professor Csörgő was a remarkable teacher who evoked my affection for probability theory during his lectures. He introduced me to mathematical research and gave me a lot of encouragement. I am grateful for all I have learnt from him and for the personal guidance he gave me at the start of my academic career. I would also like to thank Professor Barbour, who volunteered to be my advisor after the sudden and untimely death of Professor Csörgő. He introduced me to the area of probability theory I enjoy the most. I am grateful for his hospitality which I enjoyed many times at the University of Zurich, and for all the illuminating e-mails he sent. This thesis would not have been possible without his help. I am also thankful to Vilmos Totik and Gyula Pap for their useful suggestions regarding my work and this thesis.
Bibliography


